THE STANDARD EDITION
OF THE COMPLETE PSYCHOLOGICAL WORKS OF
SIGMUND FREUD
Translated from the German under the General Editorship of
JAMES STRACHEY
In Collaboration with
ANNA FREUD
Assisted by
ALIX STRACHEY and ALAN TYSON

VOLUME X
(1909)

Two Case Histories
("LITTLE HANS" AND THE "RAT MAN")

LONDON
THE HOGARTH PRESS
AND THE INSTITUTE OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

Sigmund Freud
Studienausgabe
Band VIII

Zwei Kinderneurosen

‘Der kleine Hans’

Fischer
Wissenschaft
THE STANDARD EDITION
OF THE COMPLETE PSYCHOLOGICAL WORKS OF
SIGMUND FREUD
Translated from the German under the General Editorship of
JAMES STRACHEY
In Collaboration with
ANNA FREUD
Assisted by
ALIX STRACHEY and ALAN TYSON

VOLUME X
(1909)

Two Case Histories
("LITTLE HANS" AND THE "RAT MAN")

LONDON
THE HOGARTH PRESS
AND THE INSTITUTE OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS
NOTES ON THE CREATION OF THE BILINGUAL OF THE LITTLE HANS CASE (Analysis of a Phobia in a Five-Year-Old Boy/Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

As usual I have used the Strachey translation (S.E.X) for the English text and the Studienausgabe (Bd. VIII) for the German text.

A few observations about this case:

0) Little Hans was Herbert Graf (10 April 1903, Vienna – 5 April 1973, Geneva). The 33-year-old Graf emigrated to the United States, where he became a successful and popular opera producer at New York's Metropolitan Opera (1936–1960). He staged many operatic productions around the world with famous people like Toscanini, Furtwängler, Solti, Mario Lanza, and Callas. It is said that in some of his opera productions, he used live horses. Freud gave Herbert a present, a rocking horse, on his third birthday, April 10, 1906.

1. It is interesting that no one has yet written an entire book devoted to the case of Little Hans as has been done for Freud’s four other famous cases: Dora, The Wolfman, The Ratman, and Dr. Schreber. Fortunately Freud did not name his patient “The Horseboy”.

2. It is also interesting that Freud chose to name his patient, ‘Der kleine Hans’, avoiding two other choices like: Hänsel, as in ‘Hänsel und Grethel’ (with a southern German or Austrian diminutive ending). Or Hänschen, as in ‘Hänschen klein’, a German folk and children’s song (with a northern German diminutive ending). Lacan did not have this problem with his Petit-Jean.

3. Freud referred to Olga Hönig, the mother of Little Hans (Herbert Graf) in his letter to Wilhelm Fliess of July 7 1897, Letter 65/131 where he mentions that he has a new patient, a 19 year old girl, Olga Hönig, whose father,
Ignaz Höning, died before she was 11 months old [on September 4, 1878]... but two brothers, one of them 3 years older, shot themselves.

4. The sister of Little Hans, Hanna Graf, committed suicide at the age of 36 by poisoning herself and then drowning at a lake in upstate New York on August 27, 1942.

5. Among a few interesting things I noticed while creating this text are the following quotes:

Little Hans asks his Mother: » Mama, hast du auch einen Wiwimacher? « "(Mama, do you also have a wee-wee maker?)

His Mother answers: »Selbstverständlich. Weshalb? « (Of course, why?) But, the word ‘Selbstverständlich’ could mean something like “stands by itself” page 7 (S.E. vol. X)/ page 14 (Studienausgabe, Bd.VIII)

“It is not in the least our business to ‘understand’ a case at once: this is only possible at a later stage, when we received enough impressions of it. For the present we will suspend our judgment and give our impartial attention to everything that there is to observe.” pages 22-23 (S.E. vol. X)/ pages 26-27 (Studienausgabe, Bd.VIII)

Hans: “When she’s whacked on her bare bottom, then she screams”/ »Wenn man sie am nackten Popa haut, dann schreit sie.«

I:"Have you ever whacked her?"/ »Hast du sie einmal gehaut?«

Hans: “When Mummy whacks her on her bottom, then she screams.”/ »Wenn die Mammi sie auf den Popo haut, dann schreit sie. « page 72 (S.E. vol. X)/ page 65 (Studienausgabe, Bd. VIII). One cannot help but recall here Freud’s 1919 paper “A Child is Being Beaten”
6. “The rejection, neglect, and beating of her six-month-old infant daughter may well constitute unacknowledged child abuse. It was simultaneously emotional abuse of Little Hans. The implied maternal abuse and neglect of Hanna were not addressed by Max Graf nor by Freud. Freud's silence about Olga Graf’s probable traumatic child abuse of Hanna, and seductive, intrusive over-stimulation of Little Hans is all the more remarkable in view of his previous emphasis on the pathogenic importance of “seduction trauma.”....” Witnessing the abuse of his sister would likely have intensified the guilt of Little Hans's own hostile sibling rivalry. His own wishes to eliminate his sister were shared with his mother, and her abusive behavior would have exacerbated his father's conflicts with his mother.” Little Hans: A Contemporary Overview by Harold P. Blum, M.D (Psychoanalytic Study of the Child, 62:44-60 [2007])

7. Concerning Little Hans father’s (Max Graf) drawing of the giraffe (‘Giraffe’ in German) obviously plays on his last name ‘Graf’, page 13. But this is Max Graf’s totemistic animal, and not that of his son, Little Hans.

8. So what is Le ferd-ikt of this case? (as a follower of Abraham and Sylwan Barbro, asked). It is from this single 1909 case involving a father, a phobia, and a totem, that logically necessitated Freud to construct a general theory of the father and the totem with his 1913 work, Totem and Taboo.

Richard G. Klein
New York City
Spring 2018
Die Freud-Studienausgabe erschien ursprünglich (1969–1979) im Rahmen der S. Fischer-Reihe
CONDITIO HUMANA
ERGEBNISSE AUS DEN WISSENSCHAFTEN VOM MENSCHEN
(Herausgeber: Thure von Uexküll und Ilse Grubrich-Simitis; Berater: Johannes Cremerius, Hans J. Eggers, Thomas Luckmann).
Der vorliegende Abdruck übernimmt unverändert den Text der siebten, korrigierten Auflage von Band VIII.
ANALYSIS OF A PHOBLIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY
(1909)

Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben
[»Der kleine Hans«]
(1909)
EDITOR'S NOTE

ANALYSE DER PHOBIE EINES FÜNFJÄHRIGEN KNABEN

(a) German Editions:
1913 S.K.S.N., III, 1-122 (1921, 2nd. ed.).
1924 G.S., 8, 129-263.
1932 Vier Krankengeschichten, 142-281.
1941 G.W., 7, 243-377.
1924 G.S., 8, 264-5.
1932 Vier Krankengeschichten, 282-3.
1940 G.S., 13, 431-2.

(b) English Translation:
'Analysis of a Phobia in a Five-Year-Old Boy'
(Tr. Alix and James Strachey.)

The present translation is a reprint, with some alterations and additional notes, of the English version first published in 1925.

Some records of the earlier part of little Hans's life had already been published by Freud two years before, in his paper on 'The Sexual Enlightenment of Children' (1907c). In the earlier editions of that paper, however, the boy was

EDITORISCHE VORBEMERKUNG

Deutsche Ausgaben:
1924 G. S., Bd. 8, 129-263.
1932 Vier Krankengeschichten, 142-281.
1941 G. W., Bd. 7, 243-377.

'Nachschrift zur Analyse des kleinen Hans':
1922 Int. Z. Psychoanal., Bd. 8 (3), 321.
1924 G. S., Bd. 8, 264-265.
1932 Vier Krankengeschichten, 282-283.
1940 G. W., Bd. 13, 431-432.

Einige Aufzeichnungen über die frühe Lebensgeschichte des kleinen Hans hatte Freud schon zwei Jahre zuvor in seinem 'Offenen Brief an Dr. M. Fürst: Zur sexuellen Aufklärung der Kinder' (1907c) veröffentlicht. In den ersten Ausgaben jenes Artikels wurde der Knabe
referred to as 'little Herbert'; but the name was changed to 'little Hans' after the publication of the present work. This case history is also briefly mentioned in another of Freud's previous papers, 'On the Sexual Theories of Children' (1908c), published a short time before this one. It is worth mentioning that on its first publication in the *Jahrbuch* this paper was described not as 'by' Freud, but as 'communicated by' him. In a footnote added by Freud for the eighth volume of the *Gesammelte Schriften* (1924), which contained this and the four other long case histories, he remarks that this one was published with the express consent of little Hans's father. This footnote will be found at the end of the 'Prefatory Remarks' to the case of 'Dora' (1905; Standard Ed., 7, 14).

The following short chronological table, based on data derived from the case history, may help the reader to follow the story:

1903  (April) Hans born.
1906  (*Aet.* 3–3½) First reports.
   (*Aet.* 3½–3½) (Summer) First visit to Gmunden.
   (*Aet.* 3½) Castration threat.
   (*Aet.* 3½) (October) Hanna born.
1907  (*Aet.* 3½) First dream.
   (*Aet.* 4½–4½) (Summer) Second visit to Gmunden.
   Episode of biting horse.
1908  (*Aet* 4½) (January) Episode of falling horse. Outbreak of phobia.
   (*Aet.* 5) (May) End of analysis.
ANALYSIS OF A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

I

INTRODUCTION

In the following pages I propose to describe the course of the illness and recovery of a very youthful patient. The case history is not, strictly speaking, derived from my own observation. It is true that I laid down the general lines of the treatment, and that on one single occasion, when I had a conversation with the boy, I took a direct share in it; but the treatment itself was carried out by the child's father, and it is to him that I owe my sincerest thanks for allowing me to publish his notes upon the case. But his services go further than this. No one else, in my opinion, could possibly have prevailed on the child to make any such avowals; the special knowledge by means of which he was able to interpret the remarks made by his five-year-old son was indispensable, and without it the technical difficulties in the way of conducting a psycho-analysis upon so young a child would have been insuperable. It was only because the authority of a father and of a physician were united in a single person, and because in him both affectionate care and scientific interest were combined, that it was possible in this one instance to apply the method to a use to which it would not otherwise have lent itself.¹

But the peculiar value of this observation lies in the con-

¹ [Later experience showed Freud that this limitation was unnecessary. (Cf. the works quoted in the footnote on p. 147 below.) Some further remarks on the theoretical value of child-analysis occur near the beginning of the 'Wolf Man' case history (1918a).]
When a physician treats an adult neurotic by psycho-analysis, the process he goes through of uncovering the psychical formations, layer by layer, eventually enables him to frame certain hypotheses as to the patient's infantile sexuality; and it is in the components of the latter that he believes he has discovered the motive forces of all the neurotic symptoms of later life. I have set out these hypotheses in my *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality* ([1905d]), and I am aware that they seem as strange to an outside reader as they seem incontrovertible to a psycho-analyst. But even a psycho-analyst may confess to the wish for a more direct and less roundabout proof of these fundamental theorems. Surely there must be a possibility of observing in children at first hand and in all the freshness of life the sexual impulses and wishes which we dig out so laboriously in adults from among their own débris—especially as it is also our belief that they are the common property of all men, a part of the human constitution, and merely exaggerated or distorted in the case of neurotics.

With this end in view I have for many years been urging my pupils and my friends to collect observations of the sexual life of children—the existence of which has as a rule been cleverly overlooked or deliberately denied. Among the material which came into my possession as a result of these requests, the reports which I received at regular intervals about little Hans soon began to take a prominent place. His parents were both among my closest adherents, and they had agreed that in bringing up their first child they would use no more coercion than might be absolutely necessary for maintaining good behaviour. And, as the child developed into a cheerful, good-natured and lively little boy, the experiment of letting him grow up and express himself without being intimidated went on satisfactorily. I shall now proceed to reproduce his father's records of little Hans just as I received them; and I shall of course refrain from any attempt at spoil-

---

*Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben*


In solcher Absicht pflege ich meine Schüler und Freunde seit Jahren anzuweisen, daß sie Beobachtungen über das zumeist geschickte übersehene oder absichtlich verleugnete Sexualleben der Kinder sammeln mögen. Unter dem Material, welches infolge dieser Aufforderung in meine Hände gelangte, nahmen die fortlaufenden Nachrichten über den kleinen Hans bald eine hervorrangige Stelle ein. Seine Eltern, die beide zu meinen nächsten Anhängern gehörten, waren übereingekommen, ihr erstes Kind mit nicht mehr Zwang zu erziehen, als zur Erhaltung guter Sitte unbedingt erforderlich werden sollte, und da das Kind sich zu einem heiteren, gutartigen und aufgeweckten Buben entwickelte, nahm der Versuch, ihn ohne Einschüchterung aufwachsen und sich äußern zu lassen, seinen guten Fortgang. Ich gebe nun die Aufzeichnungen des Vaters über den kleinen Hans wieder, wie sie mir zugestragen wurden, und werde mich selbstverständlich jenes Versuches enthalten,
The first reports of Hans date from a period when he was not quite three years old. At that time, by means of various remarks and questions, he was showing a quite peculiarly lively interest in that portion of his body which he used to describe as his ‘widdler’. Thus he once asked his mother this question:

Hans: ‘Mummy, have you got a widdler too?’
Mother: ‘Of course. Why?’
Hans: ‘I was only just thinking.’

At the same age he went into a cow-shed once and saw a cow being milked. ‘Oh, look!’ he said, ‘there’s milk coming out of its widdler!’

Even these first observations begin to rouse an expectation that much, if not most, of what little Hans shows us will turn out to be typical of the sexual development of children in general. I once put forward the view that there was no need to be too much horrified at finding in a woman the idea of sucking at a male organ. This repellent impulse, I argued, had a most innocent origin, since it was derived from sucking at the mother’s breast; and in this connection, I went on, a cow’s udder plays an apt part as an intermediate image, being in its nature a mamma and in its shape and position a penis. Little Hans’s discovery confirms the latter part of my contention.

Meanwhile his interest in widdlers was by no means a purely theoretical one; as might have been expected, it also impelled him to touch his member. When he was three and a half his mother found him with his hand on his penis. She threatened him in these words: ‘If you do that, I shall send

---

1 ['Wiwimacher' in the original.]
2 See my ‘Fragment of an Analysis of a Case of Hysteria’ (1905.) [Section I; Standard Ed., 7, 52.]
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

for Dr. A. to cut off your widdler. And then what'll you widdle with?

Hans: 'With my bottom.'

He made this reply without having any sense of guilt as yet. But this was the occasion of his acquiring the 'castration complex', the presence of which we are so often obliged to infer in analysing neurotics, though they one and all struggle violently against recognizing it. There is much of importance to be said upon the significance of this element in the life of a child. The 'castration complex' has left marked traces behind it in myths (and not only in Greek myths); in a passage in my Interpretation of Dreams [1900a], and elsewhere, I have touched upon the part it plays. 8

1 [Within a couple of pages of the end of the book (Standard Ed., 5, 619). The present appears to be Freud's first published use of the term 'castration complex'. The concept had already been discussed by him not only in the passage just referred to in the Interpretation of Dreams but also in his paper on 'The Sexual Theories of Children' (1905a).]

2 (Footnote added 1923:)—Since this was written, the study of the castration complex has been further developed in contributions to the subject by Lou Andreas-Salomé [1916], A. Stärcke [1910], F. Alexander [1922], and others. It has been urged that every time his mother's breast is withdrawn from a baby he is bound to feel it as castration (that is to say, as the loss of what he regards as an important part of his own body); that, further, he cannot fail to be similarly affected by the regular loss of his feces; and, finally, that the act of birth itself (consisting as it does in the separation of the child from his mother, with whom he has hitherto been united) is the prototype of all castration. While recognizing all of these roots of the complex, I have nevertheless put forward the view that the term 'castration complex' ought to be confined to those excitations and consequences which are bound up with the loss of the penis. Any one who, in analysing adults, has become convinced of the invariable presence of the castration complex, will of course find difficulty in ascribing its origin to a chance threat—of a kind which is not, after all, of such universal occurrence; he will be driven to assume that children construct this danger for themselves out of the slightest hints, which will never be wanting. [Cf. Freud's discussion of 'primal phantasies' in Lecture XXIII of his Introductory Lectures (1916-17) and in Sections V and VIII of his case history of the 'Wolf Man' (1918a). See also below,

Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

den Dr. A. kommen, der schneidet dir den Wiwimacher ab. Womit wirst du dann Wiwi machen?«

Hans: »Mit dem Popo.«


1 [Auf einer der letzten Seiten des Buches, Der Terminus »Kastrationskomplex« wurde von Freud zum erstenmal in seiner Arbeit »Über infantile Sexualtheorien« (1900 c), die er kurze Zeit vor der hier vorliegenden Krankengeschichte veröffentlichte, verwendet (s. Editorische Vorbemerkung, oben S. 11).]


1 [Within a couple of pages of the end of the book (Standard Ed., 5, 619). The present appears to be Freud's first published use of the term 'castration complex'. The concept had already been discussed by him not only in the passage just referred to in the Interpretation of Dreams but also in his paper on 'The Sexual Theories of Children' (1905a).]

2 (Footnote added 1923:)—Since this was written, the study of the castration complex has been further developed in contributions to the subject by Lou Andreas-Salomé [1916], A. Stärcke [1910], F. Alexander [1922] u. a. a. einen weiteren Ausbau erfahren. Man hat geltend gemacht, daß der Säugling schon das adultische Zurückziehen der Mutterbrust als Kastration, d. h. als Verlust eines bedeutenden Organs, schon im ersten Lebensjahr erfährt. Man hat sich auf diesen Belag begegnet; ich habe seine Rolle in einer Stelle der Traumdeutung [1900 a] (S. 385 der zweiten Auflage, 7. Aufl. S. 456) 1 und noch andrerwärts gestreift.

1 [Auf einer der letzten Seiten des Buches, Der Terminus »Kastrationskomplex« wurde von Freud zum erstenmal in seiner Arbeit »Über infantile Sexualtheorien« (1900 c), die er kurze Zeit vor der hier vorliegenden Krankengeschichte veröffentlichte, verwendet (s. Editorische Vorbemerkung, oben S. 11).]
At about the same age (three and a half), standing in front of the lions' cage at Schönbrunn, little Hans called out in a joyful and excited voice: 'I saw the lion's widdler.'

Animals owe a good deal of their importance in myths and fairy tales to the openness with which they display their genitals and their sexual functions to the inquisitive little human child. There can be no doubt about Hans's sexual curiosity; but it also roused the spirit of enquiry in him and enabled him to arrive at genuine abstract knowledge.

When he was at the station once (at three and three-quarters) he saw some water being let out of an engine. 'Oh, look,' he said, 'the engine's widdling. Where's it got its widdler?'

After a little he added in reflective tones: 'A dog and a horse have widdlers; a table and a chair haven't.' He had thus got hold of an essential characteristic for differentiating between animate and inanimate objects.

Thirst for knowledge seems to be inseparable from sexual curiosity. Hans's curiosity was particularly directed towards his parents.

Hans (aged three and three-quarters): 'Daddy, have you got a widdler too?'

Father: 'Yes, of course.'

Hans: 'But I've never seen it when you were undressing.'

Another time he was looking on intently while his mother undressed before going to bed. 'What are you staring like that for?' she asked.

Hans: 'I was only looking to see if you'd got a widdler too.'

This circumstance is also the motive, indeed, that has stimulated the search for those deeper roots of the complex which are universally forthcoming. But this makes it all the more valuable that in the case of little Hans the threat of castration is reported by his parents themselves, and moreover at a date before there was any question of his phobia.

1 [The imperial palace on the outskirts of Vienna. There was a zoological collection in the park.]

S. 167 ff., 208 ff.] Dies ist ja auch das Motiv, das den Anstoß gegeben hat, nach den allgemein vorfindlichen tieferen Wurzeln des Komplexes zu suchen. Um so wertvoller wird es aber, daß im Falle des kleinen Hans die Kastrationsdrohung von den Eltern berichtet wird und zwar aus einer Zeit, daß seine Phobie noch nicht in Frage kam. [Vgl. Freud 1924 d, sechsten Paragraphen.]
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

Mother: 'Of course. Didn't you know that?'

Hans: ‘No. I thought you were so big you’d have a widdler like a horse.’

This expectation of little Hans’s deserves to be borne in mind; it will become important later on.

But the great event of Hans’s life was the birth of his little sister Hanna when he was exactly three and a half.¹ His behaviour on that occasion was noted down by his father on the spot: ‘At five in the morning’, he writes, ‘labour began, and Hans’s bed was moved into the next room. He woke up there at seven, and, hearing his mother groaning, asked: “Why’s Mummy coughing?” Then, after a pause, “The stork’s coming to-day for certain.”

‘Naturally he has often been told during the last few days that the stork is going to bring a little girl or a little boy; and he quite rightly connected the unusual sounds of groaning with the stork’s arrival.

‘Later on he was taken into the kitchen. He saw the doctor’s bag in the front hall and asked: “What’s that?” “A bag,” was the reply. Upon which he declared with conviction: “The stork’s coming to-day.” After the baby’s delivery the midwife came into the kitchen and Hans heard her ordering some tea to be made. At this he said: “I know! Mummy’s to have some tea because she’s coughing.” He was then called into the bedroom. He did not look at his mother, however, but at the basins and other vessels, filled with blood and water, that were still standing about the room. Pointing to the blood-stained bed-pan, he observed in a surprised voice: “But blood doesn’t come out of my widdler.”

‘Everything he says shows that he connects what is strange in the situation with the arrival of the stork. He meets everything he sees with a very suspicious and intent look, and there can be no question that his first doubts about the stork have taken root.

¹ April 1903 to October 1906.

Analyse der Phobie eines jünfjährigen Knaben

Mama: »Natürlich. Hast du denn das nicht gewußt?«

Hans: «Nein, ich hab’ gedacht, weil du so groß bist, hast du einen Wiwimacher wie ein Pferd.«

Wir wollen uns diese Erwartung des kleinen Hans merken; sie wird später zu Bedeutung kommen.

Das große Ereignis in Hansens Leben ist aber die Geburt seiner kleinen Schwester Hanna, als er genau 3½ Jahre alt war (April 1903 bis Oktober 1906). Sein Benehmen bei diesem Anlasse wurde vom Vater unmittelbar notiert:

Früh um 5 Uhr, mit dem Beginne der Wehen, wird Hans' Bett ins Nebenzimmer gebracht; hier erwacht er um 7 Uhr und hört das Stöhnen der Gebärenden, worauf er frage: «Was hustet denn die Mama?» — Nach einer Pause: «Heut' kommt gewiß der Storch.»

Man hat ihm natürlich in den letzten Tagen oft gesagt, der Storch wird ein Mädel oder Eber bringen, und er verbindet das ungewohnte Stöhnen ganz richtig mit der Ankunft des Storches.

Später wird er in die Küche gebracht; im Vorzimmer sieht er die Tasche des Arztes und fragt: «Was ist das?», worauf man ihm sagt: «Eine Tasche.» Er dann überzeugt: «Heut’ kommt der Storch.» Nach der Entbindung kommt die Hebammme in die Küche und Hans hört, wie sie anordnet, man möge einen Tee kochen, worauf er sagt: «Aha, weil die Mammi hustet, bekommt sie einen Tee.» Er wird dann ins Zimmer gerufen, schaut aber nicht auf die Mama, sondern auf die Gefäße mit blutigem Wasser, die noch im Zimmer stehen, und bemerkt, auf die blutige Leibschiussel deutend, befremdet: «Aber aus meinem Wiwimacher kommt kein Blut.»

Alle seine Aussprüche zeigen, daß er das Ungewöhnliche der Situation mit der Ankunft des Storches in Zusammenhang bringt. Er macht zu allem, was er sieht, eine sehr mißtrauische, gespannte Miene, und zweifellos hat sich das erste Mißtrauen gegen den Storch bei ihm festgesetzt.
INTRODUCTION

'Hans is very jealous of the new arrival, and whenever any one praises her, says she is a lovely baby, and so on, he at once declares scornfully: "But she’s not got any teeth yet." 1

And in fact when he saw her for the first time he was very much surprised that she was unable to speak, and decided that this was because she had no teeth. During the first few days he was naturally put very much in the background. He was suddenly taken ill with a sore throat. In his fever he was heard saying: "But I don’t want a baby sister!"

Some six months later he had got over his jealousy, and his brotherly affection for the baby was only equalled by his sense of his own superiority over her. 2

A little later Hans was watching his seven-day-old sister being given a bath. "But her widdler’s still quite small," he remarked; and then added, as though by way of consolation: "When she grows up it’ll get bigger all right." 3

At the same age (when he was three and three-quarters).

1 This again is a typical mode of behaviour. Another little boy, only two years his sister’s senior, used to parry similar remarks with an angry cry of ‘Too ’ickle! too ’ickle!’

2 Another child, rather older than Hans, welcomed his younger brother with the words: ‘The Storch shall take him away again.’ Compare in this connection my remarks in The Interpretation of Dreams [1900a, Chapter V, Section D (β), Standard Ed., 4, 248 ff.] on dreams of the death of loved relatives.

3 Two other boys were reported to me as having made the same judgement, expressed in identical words and followed by the same anticipation, when they were allowed to satisfy their curiosity and look at their baby sister’s body for the first time. One might well feel horrified at such signs of the premature decay of a child’s intellect. Why was it that these young enquirers did not report what they really saw—namely, that there was no widdler there? In little Hans’s case, at all events, we can account completely for the faulty perception. We are aware that by a process of careful induction he had arrived at the general proposition that every animate object, in contradistinction to inanimate ones, possesses a widdler. His mother had confirmed him in this conviction by giving him corroborative information in regard to persons inaccessible to his own observation.

Hans is auf den neuen Ankömmling sehr eifersüchtig und sagt, wenn irgendwer sie lobt, schön findet usw., sofort höhnisch: «Aber sie hat noch keine Zähne!». Als er sie nämlich zum erstenmal sah, war er sehr überrascht, daß sie nicht sprechen kann, und meinte, sie könne nicht sprechen, weil sie keine Zähne habe. Er wird in den ersten Tagen selbstverständlich sehr zurückgesetzt und erkrankt plötzlich an Angina. Im Fieber hört man ihn sagen: «Aber ich will kein Schwesterl haben!»

Nach etwa einem halben Jahre ist die Eifersucht überwunden, und er wird ein ebenso zärtlicher wie seiner Überlegenheit bewußter Bruder 4.


Im gleichen Alter, zu 3½ Jahren,

1 Wiederum ein typisches Verhalten. Ein anderer, nur um zwei Jahre älterer Bruder pflegte unter den gleichen Verhältnissen ärgerlich mit dem Ausrufe zu k(0)ein, zu k(0)ein abzuwehren.

4 Der Storch soll ihn wieder mitnehmen, äußerte ein anderes, etwas älteres Kind zum Willkomm des Brüderchens. Vergleiche hiezu, was ich in der Traumdeutung über die Träume vom Tode teurer Verwandter bemerkt habe (S. 173 ff., 8. Aufl. [1900a, Kap. V, Abschnitt D (β)]).

1 Das nämliche Urteil, in den identischen Worten ausgedrückt und von der gleichen Erwartung gefolgt, wurde mir von zwei anderen Knaben berichtet, als sie den Leib eines kleinen Schwesterchens zuerst neugierig behausten konnten. Man könnte über diese frühzeitige Verderblos des kindlichen Intellects erschrecken. Warum konstatieren diese jugendliche Forscher nicht, was sie wirklich sehen, nämlich daß kein Wiwimacher vorhanden ist? Für unseren kleinen Hans können wir allerdings die volle Aufklärung seiner fehlerhaften Wahrnehmung geben. Wir wissen, er hat sich durch sorgfältige Induktion den allgemeinen Satz erworben, daß jedes belebte Wesen im Gegenansatz zum Unbelebten einen Wiwimacher besitzt; die Mutter hat ihn in dieser Überzeugung bestärkt, indem sie ihm bejahende Auskünfte über solche Personen gab, die sich seiner eigenen Beobachtung entzogen.
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

Hans produced his first account of a dream: "To-day when I was asleep I thought I was at Gmunden[1] with Mariedl." Mariedl was the thirteen-year-old daughter of our landlord and used often to play with him.

As Hans’s father was telling his mother the dream in his presence, he corrected him, saying: ‘Not with Mariedl, but quite alone with Mariedl.’

In this connection we learn: ‘In the summer of 1906 Hans was at Gmunden, and used to run about all day long with our landlord’s children. When we left Gmunden we thought he would be very much upset by having to come away and move back to town. To our surprise this was not so. He seemed glad of the change, and for several weeks he talked

He was now utterly incapable of surrendering what he had achieved merely on the strength of this single observation made upon his little sister. He therefore made a judgement that in that instance also there was a widdler present, only that it was still very small, but that it would grow till it was as big as a horse’s.

We can go a step further in vindicating little Hans’s honour. As a matter of fact, he was behaving no worse than a philosopher of the school of Wundt. In the view of that school, consciousness is the invariable characteristic of what is mental, just as in the view of little Hans a widdler is the indispensable criterion of what is animate. If now the philosopher comes across mental processes whose existence cannot but be inferred, but about which there is not a trace of consciousness to be detected—for the subject, in fact, knows nothing of them, although it is impossible to avoid inferring their existence—then, instead of saying that they are unconscious mental processes, he calls them semi-conscious. The widdler’s still very small! And in this comparison the advantage is in favour of little Hans. For, as is so often the case with the sexual researches of children, behind the mistake a piece of genuine knowledge lies concealed. Little girls do possess a small widdler, which we call a clitoris, though it does not grow any larger but remains permanently stunted. Compare my short paper on ‘The Sexual Theories of Children’ (1908b) [and the Section on ‘The Sexual Researches of Childhood’ in the second of Freud’s Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality (1905c); Standard Ed., 7, 194 ff.].

1 [A summer resort on one of the Upper Austrian lakes.—Mariedl, Franzl, Fritzi, and similar forms are the characteristically Austrian affectionate diminutives of Marie, Franz, Fritz, etc.]
very little about Gmunden. It was not until after some weeks had passed that there began to emerge reminiscences—often vividly coloured—of the time he had spent at Gmunden. During the last four weeks or so he has been working these reminiscences up into phantasies. He imagines that he is playing with the other children, with Berta, Olga, and Fritzl; he talks to them as though they were really with him, and he is capable of amusing himself in this way for hours at a time. Now that he has got a sister and is obviously taken up with the problem of the origin of children, he always calls Berta and Olga "his children"; and once he added: "my children Berta and Olga were brought by the stork too." The dream, occurring now, after six months' absence from Gmunden, is evidently to be read as an expression of a longing to go back there.

Thus far his father. I will anticipate what is to come by adding that when Hans made this last remark about his children having been brought by the stork, he was contradicting aloud a doubt that was lurking within him.

His father luckily made a note of many things which turned out later on to be of unexpected value. [See p. 377 ff.] I drew a giraffe for Hans, who has been to Schönbrunn several times lately. He said to me: "Draw its widdler too." "Draw it yourself," I answered; whereupon he added this line to my picture (see Fig. 1). He began by drawing a short stroke, and then added a bit on to it, remarking: "Its widdler's longer."

1 [In all the later reprints of this picture there is an unexplained horizontal line. Reference to the original edition in the *Jahrbuch*...]


So weit der Vater; ich bemerke vorgreifend, daß Hans mit der letzten Äußerung über seine Kinder, die der Storch gebracht haben soll, einem in ihm steckenden Zweifel laut widerspricht.

Der Vater hat zum Glück mancherlei notiert, was später zu ungeahntem Werte kommen sollte. [Vgl. S. 37 ff.] Ich zeichne Hans, der in letzter Zeit öfter in Schönbrunn war, eine Giraffe. Er sagt mir: "Zeichne doch auch den Wiwimacher." Ich darauf: "Zeichne du ihn selbst dazu." Hierauf fügt er an das Bild der Giraffe folgenden Strich (die Zeichnung liegt bei) 1, den er zuerst kurz zieht und dem er dann ein Stück hinzufügt, indem er bemerkt: "Der Wiwimacher ist länger."
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

'Hans and I walked past a horse that was micturating, and he said: "The horse has got its widdler underneath like me."

'He was watching his three-months-old sister being given a bath, and said in pitying tones: "She has got a tiny little widdler."

'He was given a doll to play with and undressed it. He examined it carefully and said: "Her widdler's ever so tiny."

As we already know, this formula made it possible for him to go on believing in his discovery [of the distinction between animate and inanimate objects] (see p. 9 [and 11, n. 3]).

Every investigator runs the risk of falling into an occasional error. It is some consolation for him if, like little Hans in the next example, he does not err alone but can quote a common linguistic usage in his support. For Hans saw a monkey in his picture-book one day, and pointing to its up-curled tail, said: 'Daddy, look at its widdler!' [cf. p. 311 n.]

His interest in widdlers led him to invent a special game of his own. 'Leading out of the front hall there is a lavatory and also a dark storeroom for keeping wood in. For some time past Hans has been going into this wood-cupboard and saying: "I'm going to my W.C." I once looked in to see what he was doing in the dark storeroom. He showed me his parts and said: "I'm widdling." That is to say, he has been "playing" at W.C. That it is in the nature of a game is shown not merely by the fact that he was only pretending to widdle, but also by the fact that he does not go into the W.C., which would after all be far simpler, but prefers the wood-cupboard and calls it "his W.C."'

We should be doing Hans an injustice if we were to trace only the auto-erotic features of his sexual life. His father has detailed information to give us on the subject of his love shows that this horizontal line had the word 'Wiwimacher' at the end of it. The word and the line had evidently been added by way of explanation, presumably by Hans's father. The missing gloss has now been restored.

Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

Ich gehe mit Hans an einem Pferde vorbei, das uriniert. Er sagt: »Das Pferd hat den Wiwimacher unten so wie ich.«

Er sieht zu, wie man seine 3monatliche Schwester badet, und sagt bedauerns: »Sie hat einen ganz, ganz kleinen Wiwimacher.«

Er erhält eine Puppe zum Spielen, die er auskleidet. Er schaut sie sorgfältig an und sagt: »Die hat aber einen ganz kleinen Wiwimacher.«

Wir wissen bereits, daß es ihm mit dieser Formel möglich gemacht ist, seine Entdeckung [der Unterscheidung des Lebendigen vom Leblosen] (vgl. S. 16 [und 18, Anm. 1]) aufrechtzuerhalten.

Jeder Forscher ist in Gefahr, gelegentlich dem Irrtum zu verfallen. Ein Trost bleibt es, wenn er, wie unser Hans im nächsten Beispiele, nicht allein irrt, sondern sich zur Entschuldigung auf den Sprachgebrauch be­rufen kann. Er sieht nämlich in seinem Bilderbuch einen Affen und zeigt auf dessen aufwärts geringelten Schwanz: »Schau, Vatti, der Wiwimacher.«

In seinem Interesse für den Wiwimacher hat er sich ein ganz besonderes Spiel ausgedacht.

Im Vorzimmer ist der Abort und eine dunkle Holzkammer. Seit einiger Zeit geht Hans in die Holzkammer und sagt: »Ich geh' in mein Klosett.« Einmal schaue ich hinein, um zu sehen, was er in der dicken Kammer macht. Er exhibiert und sagt: »Ich mache Wiwi.« Das heißt also: er »spielt« Klosett. Der Spielfaracter erheilt nicht nur daraus, daß er das Wiwimachen bloß fingiert und nicht etwa wirklich ausführt, sondern auch daraus, daß er nicht ins Klosett geht, was eigentlich viel einfacher wäre, vielmehr die Holzkammer vorzieht, die er »sein Klosett« heißt.

Wir würden Hans unrecht tun, wenn wir nur die autoerotischen Züge seines Sexuallebens verfolgten. Sein Vater hat uns ausführliche Beob­achtungen über seine Liebesbeziehungen...
relationships with other children. From these we can discern the existence of an 'object-choice' just as in the case of an adult; and also, it must be confessed, a very striking degree of inconstancy and a disposition to polygamy.

In the winter (at the age of three and three-quarters) I took Hans to the skating rink and introduced him to my friend N.'s two little daughters, who were about ten years old. Hans sat down beside them, while they, in the consciousness of their mature age, looked down on the little urchin with a good deal of contempt; he gazed at them with admiration, though this proceeding made no great impression on them. In spite of this Hans always spoke of them afterwards as "my little girls". "Where are my little girls? When are my little girls coming?" And for some weeks he kept tormenting me with the question: "When am I going to the rink again to see my little girls?"

A five-year-old boy cousin came to visit Hans, who had by then reached the age of four. Hans was constantly putting his arms round him, and once, as he was giving him one of these tender embraces, said: 'I am so fond of you.'

This is the first trace of homosexuality that we have come across in him, but it will not be the last. Little Hans seems to be a positive paragon of all the vices.

When Hans was four years old we moved into a new flat. A door led out of the kitchen on to a balcony, from which one could see into a flat on the opposite side of the courtyard. In this flat Hans discovered a little girl of about seven or eight. He would sit on the step leading on to the balcony so as to admire her, and would stop there for hours on end. At four o'clock in the afternoon in particular, when the little girl came home from school, he was not to be kept in the room, and nothing could induce him to abandon his post of observation. Once, when the little girl failed to make her appearance at the window at her usual hour, Hans grew quite restless,
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

and kept pestering the servants with questions—“When’s the little girl coming? Where’s the little girl?” and so on. When she did appear at last, he was quite blissful and never took his eyes off the flat opposite. The violence with which this “long-range love” came over him is to be explained by his having no playmates of either sex. Spending a good deal of time with other children clearly forms part of a child’s normal development.

Hans obtained some companionship of this kind when, shortly afterwards (he was by then four and a half), we moved to Gmunden for the summer holidays. In our house there his playmates were our landlord’s children: Franzl (about twelve years old), Fritzl (eight), Olga (seven), and Berta (five). Besides these there were the neighbour’s children, Anna (ten), and two other little girls of nine and seven whose names I have forgotten. Hans’s favourite was Fritzl; he often hugged him and made protestations of his love. Once when he was asked: “Which of the girls are you fondest of?” he answered: “Fritzl!” At the same time he treated the girls in a most aggressive, masculine and arrogant way, embracing them and kissing them heartily—a process to which Berta in particular offered no objection. When Berta was coming out of the room one evening he put his arms round her neck and said in the fondest tones: “Berta, you are a dear!” This, by the way, did not prevent his kissing the others as well and assuring them of his love. He was fond, too, of the fourteen-year-old Mariedl—another of our landlord’s daughters—who used to play with him. One evening as he was being put to bed he said: “I want Mariedl to sleep with me.” On being told that would not do, he said: “Then she shall sleep with Mummy or with Daddy.” He was told that would not do.

1 Und die Liebe per Distanz, Kurzgesagt, misfällt mir ganz.

WILHELM BUSCH.
[Long-range love, I must admit, Does not suit my taste a bit.]

2 [This is a slip for ‘four and a quarter’.

Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben


Dieser wird dann Hans zuteil, als wir kurz darauf (4¼ Jahre) zum Sommeraufenthalte nach Gmunden übersiedeln. In unserem Hause sind seine Spielgefährten die Kinder des Hausherrn: Franzl (etwa 12 Jahre), Fritzl (8 Jahre), Olga (7 Jahre), Berta (5 Jahre) und überhaupt die Nachbarkinder: Anna (10 Jahre) und noch zwei Mädel im Alter von 9 und 7 Jahren, deren Namen ich nicht mehr weiß. Sein Liebling ist Fritzl, den er oft umarmt und seiner Liebe versichert. Er wird einmal gefragt: »Welches von den Mädels hast du denn am liebsten?« Er antwortet: »Den Fritzl.« Gleichzeitig ist er gegen die Mädchen sehr aggressiv, männlich, erobernd, umarmt sie und küßt sie ab, was sich namentlich Berta ganz gerne gefallen läßt. Als Berta eines Abends aus dem Zimmer kommt, umhals er sie und sagt im zärtlichsten Tone: »Berta, du bist aber liebe, was ihn übrigens nicht hindert, auch die anderen zu küssen und seiner Liebe zu versichern. Auch die etwa 14 Jahre alte Mariedl, ebenfalls eine Tochter des Hausherrn, die mit ihm spielt, hat er gerne und sagt eines Abends, als er zu Bett gebracht wird: »Die Mariedl soll bei mir schlafen.« Auf die Antwort: »Das geht nicht», sagt er: »So soll sie bei der Mammie oder dem Vatti schlafen.« Man erwidert ihm: »Auch das geht nicht, die
either, but that Mariedl must sleep with her own father and mother. Upon which the following dialogue took place:

'Hans: "Oh, then I'll just go downstairs and sleep with Mariedl."

'Mother: "You really want to go away from Mummy and sleep downstairs?"

'Hans: "Oh, I'll come up again in the morning to have breakfast and do number one."

'Mother: "Well, if you really want to go away from Daddy and Mummy, then take your coat and knickers and—good-bye!"

'Hans did in fact take his clothes and go towards the staircase, to go and sleep with Mariedl, but, it need hardly be said, he was fetched back.

'(Behind his wish, "I want Mariedl to sleep with us," there of course lay another one: "I want Mariedl" (with whom he liked to be so much) "to become one of our family." But Hans's father and mother were in the habit of taking him into their bed, though only occasionally, and there can be no doubt that lying beside them had aroused erotic feelings in him; so that his wish to sleep with Mariedl had an erotic sense as well. Lying in bed with his father or mother was a source of erotic feelings in Hans just as it is in every other child.)

In spite of his accesses of homosexuality, little Hans bore himself like a true man in the face of his mother's challenge.

'In the next instance, too, Hans said to his mother: "I say, I should so like to sleep with the little girl." This episode has

1 ['Of course' was omitted (perhaps inadvertently) after the first edition.—In the editions before 1924 this whole paragraph was enclosed in square brackets. The translators, in 1923, inferred from this fact, and from the references to Hans's parents being in the third person, that the paragraph was a comment of Freud's. On his being asked, however, he replied explicitly that the paragraph originated from Hans's father. From 1924 onwards the square brackets were replaced by round ones.]
given us a great deal of entertainment, for Hans has really behaved like a grown-up person in love. For the last few days a pretty little girl of about eight has been coming to the restaurant where we have lunch. Of course Hans fell in love with her on the spot. He keeps constantly turning round in his chair to take furtive looks at her; when he has finished eating, he stations himself in her vicinity so as to flirt with her, but if he finds he is being observed, he blushes scarlet. If his glances are returned by the little girl, he at once looks shamefacedly the other way. His behaviour is naturally a great joy to everyone lunching at the restaurant. Every day as he is taken there he says: "Do you think the little girl will be there to-day?" And when at last she appears, he goes quite red, just as a grown-up person would in such a case. One day he came to me with a beaming face and whispered in my ear: "Daddy, I know where the little girl lives. I saw her going up the steps in such-and-such a place." Whereas he treats the little girls at home aggressively, in this other affair he appears in the part of a plato­nic and languishing admirer. Perhaps this has to do with the little girls at home being village children, while the other is a young lady of refinement. As I have already mentioned, he once said he would like to sleep with her.

'Not wanting Hans to be left in the overwrought state to which he had been brought by his passion for the little girl, I managed to make them acquainted, and invited the little girl to come and see him in the garden after he had finished his afternoon sleep. Hans was so much excited at the prospect of the little girl coming, that for the first time he could not get off to sleep in the afternoon, but tossed about restlessly on his bed. When his mother asked, "Why aren't you asleep? Are you thinking about the little girl?" he said "Yes" with a happy look. And when he came home from the restaurant he said to everyone in the house: "I say, my little girl's coming to see me to-day." The fourteen-year-old Mariedl reported
that he had repeatedly kept asking her: "I say, do you think she'll be nice to me? Do you think she'll kiss me if I kiss her?" and so on.

'But in the afternoon it rained, so that the visit did not come off, and Hans consoled himself with Berta and Olga.'

Other observations, also made at the time of the summer holidays, suggest that all sorts of new developments were going on in the little boy.

'Hans, four and a quarter. This morning Hans was given his usual daily bath by his mother and afterwards dried and powdered. As his mother was powdering round his penis and taking care not to touch it, Hans said: "Why don't you put your finger there?"

'Mother: "Because that'd be piggish."
'Hans: "What's that? Piggish? Why?"
'Mother: "Because it's not proper."
'Hans (laughing): "But it's great fun."' 1

At about the same period Hans had a dream which was in striking contrast with the boldness he had shown towards his mother. It was the first dream of his that was made unrecognizable by distortion. His father's penetration, however, succeeded in clearing it up.

'Hans, four and a quarter. Dream. This morning Hans woke up and said: "I say, last night I thought: One person said: 'Who wants to come to me?' Then someone said: 'I wish.' Then I made him wet."'
Further questions made it clear that there was no visual content whatever in this dream, and that it was of the purely auditory type. During the last few days Hans has been playing parlour games and "forfeits" with our landlord's children, amongst whom are his friends Olga (aged seven) and Berta (aged five).\(^1\) (The game of forfeits is played in this way: A: "Whose is this forfeit in my hand?" B: "Mine." Then it is decided what B must do.) The dream was modelled on this game; only what Hans wished was that the person to whom the forfeit belonged should be condemned, not to give the usual kiss or be given the usual box on the ear, but to widdle, or rather to be made to widdle by someone.\(^2\)

I got him to tell me the dream again. He told it in the same words, except that instead of "then some one said" this time he said "then she said". This "she" is obviously Berta or Olga, one of the girls he had been playing with. Translated, the dream ran as follows: "I was playing forfeits with the little girls. I asked: 'Who wants to come to me?' She (Berta or Olga) replied: 'I do.' Then she had to make me widdle." (That is, she had to assist him in micturating, which is evidently agreeable for Hans.)

It is clear that being made to widdle—having his knickers unbuttoned and his penis taken out—is a pleasurable process for Hans. On walks it is mostly his father who assists Hans in this way; and this gives the child an opportunity for the fixation of homosexual inclinations upon him.

Two days ago, as I have already reported, while his mother was washing and powdering his genital region, he asked her: "Why don't you put your finger there?" Yesterday, when I was helping Hans to do number one, he asked me for the first time to take him to the back of the house so

1 In the German editions before 1924 the ages of the two girls were wrongly reversed here. Cf. p. 16.
2 (So in the original. But, as will be seen, the sense requires 'or rather to make someone else widdle'.)
that no one should see him. He added: "Last year when I widdled, Berta and Olga watched me." This meant, I think, that last year he had enjoyed being watched by the girls, but that this was no longer so. His exhibitionism has now succumbed to repression. The fact that the wish that Berta and Olga should watch him widdling (or make him widdle) is now repressed in real life is the explanation of its appearance in the dream, where it was neatly disguised under the game of forfeits.—I have repeatedly observed since then that he does not like to be seen widdling.

I will only add that this dream obeys the rule I have given in *The Interpretation of Dreams* [1900a, Chapter VI, Section F, (Standard Ed., 5, 418)], to the effect that speeches occurring in dreams are derived from speeches heard or spoken by the dreamer during the preceding days.

Hans’s father has noted down one other observation, dating from the period immediately after their return to Vienna: ‘Hans (aged four and a half) was again watching his little sister being given her bath, when he began laughing. On being asked why he was laughing, he replied: “I’m laughing at Hanna’s widdler.” “Why?” “Because her widdler’s so lovely.”’

‘Of course his answer was a disingenuous one. In reality her widdler had seemed to him funny. Moreover, this is the first time he has recognized in this way the distinction between male and female genitals instead of denying it.’

zuschauen könne, und fügte hinzu: »Voriges Jahr, wie ich Wiwi gemacht habe, haben mir die Berta und die Olga zugesehen.« Ich meine, das heißt, voriges Jahr war ihm dieses Zuschauen der Mädchen angenehm, jetzt aber nicht mehr. Die Exhibitionslust unterliegt jetzt der Verdrängung. Daß der Wunsch, Berta und Olga mögen ihm beim Wiwimachen zuschauen (oder ihn Wiwi machen lassen), jetzt im Leben verdrängt wird, ist die Erklärung für dessen Auftreten im Traume, in dem er sich die hübsche Einkleidung durch das Pfänderspiel geschaffen hat. — Ich beobachtete seither wiederholt, daß er beim Wiwimachen nicht gesehen werden will.

Ich bemerke hierzu nur, daß auch dieser Traum sich der Regel fügt, die ich in der *Traumdeutung* (S. 283 f., 7. Aufl.¹) gegeben habe: Reden, die im Traume vorkommen, stammen von gehört oder selbst gehaltenen Reden der nächstvorigen Tage ab.

Aus der Zeit bald nach der Rückkehr nach Wien hat der Vater noch eine Beobachtung fixiert:

Hans (4½ Jahre) sieht wieder zu, wie seine kleine Schwester gebadet wird, und fängt an zu lachen. Man fragt ihn: Warum lachst du?

Hans: Ich lache über den Wiwimacher der Hanna. —

> Warum? — Weil der Wiwimacher so schön ist.

Die Antwort ist natürlich eine falsche. Der Wiwimacher kam ihm eben komisch vor. Es ist übrigens das erstmal, daß er den Unterschied zwischen männlichem und weiblichem Genitale in solcher Weise anerkennt, anstatt ihn zu verleugnen.
II

CASE HISTORY AND ANALYSIS

'My dear Professor, I am sending you a little more about Hans—but this time, I am sorry to say, material for a case history. As you will see, during the last few days he has developed a nervous disorder, which has made my wife and me most uneasy, because we have not been able to find any means of dissipating it. I shall venture to call upon you tomorrow, but in the meantime... I enclose a written record of the material available.

'No doubt the ground was prepared by sexual over-excitation due to his mother's tenderness; but I am not able to specify the actual exciting cause. He is afraid a horse will bite him in the street, and this fear seems somehow to be connected with his having been frightened by a large penis. As you know from a former report, he had noticed at a very early age what large penises horses have, and at that time he inferred that as his mother was so large she must have a widdler like a horse. [Cf. p. 10.]

'I cannot see what to make of it. Has he seen an exhibitionist somewhere? Or is the whole thing simply connected with his mother? It is not very pleasant for us that he should begin setting us problems so early. Apart from his being afraid of going into the street and from his being in low spirits in the evening, he is in other respects the same Hans, as bright and cheerful as ever.'

We will not follow Hans's father either in his easily comprehensible anxieties or in his first attempts at finding an explanation; we will begin by examining the material before us. It is not in the least our business to 'understand' a case at once: this is only possible at a later stage, when we have

II

KRANKENGESCHICHTE UND ANALYSE

Geehrter Herr Professor! Ich sende Ihnen wieder ein Stückchen Hans, diesmal leider Beiträge zu einer Krankengeschichte. Wie sie daraus lesen, hat sich bei ihm in den letzten Tagen eine nervöse Störung entwickelt, die mich und meine Frau sehr beunruhigt, weil wir kein Mittel zu ihrer Beseitigung finden konnten. Ich erbte mir die Erlaubnis, Sie morgen... zu besuchen, habe Ihnen aber... das verfügbare Material schriftlich aufgezeichnet.

Sexuelle Übererregung durch Zärtlichkeit der Mutter hat wohl den Grund gelegt, aber den Erreger der Störung weiß ich nicht anzugeben. Die Furcht, daß ihn auf der Gasse ein Pferd beißen werde, scheint irgendwie damit zusammenzuhängen, daß er durch einen großen Penis geschreckt ist—den großen Penis des Pferdes hat er, wie Sie aus einer früheren Aufzeichnung wissen, schon zeitig bemerkt, und er hat damals den Schluß gezogen, daß die Mama, weil sie so groß ist, einen Widdler haben müsse wie ein Pferd. [Vgl. S. 16.]


Wir wollen uns weder die begreiflichen Sorgen noch die ersten Erklärungsversuche des Vaters zu eigen machen, sondern uns zunächst das mitgeteilte Material besuchen. Es ist gar nicht unsere Aufgabe, einen Krankheitsfall gleich zu »verstehen«, dies kann erst später gelingen,
CASE HISTORY AND ANALYSIS

received enough impressions of it. For the present we will suspend our judgement and give our impartial attention to everything that there is to observe.

The earliest accounts, dating from the first days in January of the present year (1908), run as follows:

'Hans (aged four and three-quarters) woke up one morning in tears. Asked why he was crying, he said to his mother: "When I was asleep I thought you were gone and I had no Mummy to coax with."'

'An anxiety dream, therefore.

'I had already noticed something similar at Gmunden in the summer. When he was in bed in the evening he was usually in a very sentimental state. Once he made a remark to this effect: "Suppose I was to have no Mummy", or "Suppose you were to go away", or something of the sort; I cannot remember the exact words. Unfortunately, when he got into an elegiac mood of that kind, his mother used always to take him into bed with her.

'On about January 5th he came into his mother's bed in the morning, and said: "Do you know what Aunt M. said? She said: 'He has got a dear little thingummy.'"' (Aunt M. was stopping with us four weeks ago. Once while she was watching my wife giving the boy a bath she did in fact say these words to her in a low voice. Hans had overheard them and was now trying to put them to his own uses.)

'On January 7th he went to the Stadtspark with his nursemaid as usual. In the street he began to cry and asked to be taken home, saying that he wanted to "coax" with his Mummy. At home he was asked why he had refused to go

1 'Hans's expression for "to caress".'
2 See footnote 1.

Krankengeschichte und Analyse


Die ersten Mitteilungen aber, die aus den ersten Jänneragen dieses Jahres, 1908, stammen, lauten:

Hans (4½ Jahre) kommt morgens weinend auf und sagt der Mama auf die Frage, warum er weine: »Wie ich geschlafen hab', hab' ich gedacht, du bist fort und ich hab' keine Mammie zum Schmeicheln« (= liebkosen).

Also ein Angstraum.


Etwa am 5. Jänner kam er früh zur Mama ins Bett und sagte bei diesem Anlass: »Weißt du, was Tante M. gesagt hat? »Er hat aber ein liebes Pischl.« (Tante M. hatte vor 4 Wochen bei uns gewohnt; sie sah einmal zu, wie meine Frau den Knaben batete, und sagte Obiges tatsächlich leise zu meiner Frau. Hans hat es gehört und suchte es zu verwerten.)

Am 7. Jänner geht er mit dem Kindermädchen wie gewöhnlich in den Stadtspark, fängt auf der Straße an zu weinen und verlangt, daß man mit ihm nach Hause gehe; er wolle mit der Mammie »schmeicheln«. Zu Hause befragt, weshalb er nicht weiter gehen wollte und geweint

1 Pischl = Genitale. Liebkosungen der Kindergenitalien in Worten oder auch Tätigkeiten von seiten zärtlicher Verwandter, mitunter auch der Eltern selbst, gehören zu den gewöhnlichsten Vorkommnissen, von denen die Psychoanalysen voll sind.
27

[Public gardens near the centre of Vienna.]
any farther and had cried, but he would not say. Till the evening he was cheerful, as usual. But in the evening he grew visibly frightened; he cried and could not be separated from his mother, and wanted to “coax” with her again. Then he grew cheerful again, and slept well.

On January 8th my wife decided to go out with him herself, so as to see what was wrong with him. They went to Schönbrunn, where he always likes going. Again he began to cry, did not want to start, and was frightened. In the end he did go; but was visibly frightened in the street. On the way back from Schönbrunn he said to his mother, after much internal struggling: “I was afraid a horse would bite me.” (He had, in fact, become uneasy at Schönbrunn when he saw a horse.) In the evening he seems to have had another attack similar to that of the previous evening, and to have wanted to be “coaxed” with. He was calmed down. He said, crying: “I know I shall have to go for a walk again tomorrow.” And later: “The horse’ll come into the room.”

On the same day his mother asked: “Do you put your hand to your widdler?” and he answered: “Yes. Every evening, when I’m in bed.” The next day, January 9th, he was warned, before his afternoon sleep, not to put his hand to his widdler. When he woke up he was asked about it, and said he had put it there for a short while all the same.

Here, then, we have the beginning of Hans’s anxiety as well as of his phobia. As we see, there is good reason for keeping the two separate. Moreover, the material seems to be amply sufficient for giving us our bearings; and no moment of time is so favourable for the understanding of a case as its initial stage, such as we have here, though unluckily that stage is as a rule neglected or passed over in silence. The disorder set in with thoughts that were at the same time fearful and tender, and then followed an anxiety dream on the subject of losing his mother and so not being able to coax with her any more. His affection for his mother must therefore have, will it not say. But in the evening he was cheerful, as usual. But in the evening he grew visibly frightened; he cried and could not be separated from his mother, and wanted to “coax” with her again. Then he grew cheerful again, and slept well.

On January 8th my wife decided to go out with him herself, so as to see what was wrong with him. They went to Schönbrunn, where he always likes going. Again he began to cry, did not want to start, and was frightened. In the end he did go; but was visibly frightened in the street. On the way back from Schönbrunn he said to his mother, after much internal struggling: “I was afraid a horse would bite me.” (He had, in fact, become uneasy at Schönbrunn when he saw a horse.) In the evening he seems to have had another attack similar to that of the previous evening, and to have wanted to be “coaxed” with. He was calmed down. He said, crying: “I know I shall have to go for a walk again tomorrow.” And later: “The horse’ll come into the room.”

On the same day his mother asked: “Do you put your hand to your widdler?” and he answered: “Yes. Every evening, when I’m in bed.” The next day, January 9th, he was warned, before his afternoon sleep, not to put his hand to his widdler. When he woke up he was asked about it, and said he had put it there for a short while all the same.

Here, then, we have the beginning of Hans’s anxiety as well as of his phobia. As we see, there is good reason for keeping the two separate. Moreover, the material seems to be amply sufficient for giving us our bearings; and no moment of time is so favourable for the understanding of a case as its initial stage, such as we have here, though unluckily that stage is as a rule neglected or passed over in silence. The disorder set in with thoughts that were at the same time fearful and tender, and then followed an anxiety dream on the subject of losing his mother and so not being able to coax with her any more. His affection for his mother must therefore (Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben)

hat, will er es nicht sagen. Bis zum Abend ist er heiter wie gewöhnlich; abends bekommt er sichtlich Angst, weint und ist von der Mama nicht fortzubringen; er will wieder schmeicheln. Dann wird er wieder heiter und schläft gut.

Am 8. Jänner will die Frau selbst mit ihm spazierengehen, um zu sehen, was mit ihm los ist, und zwar nach Schönbrunn, wohin er sehr gerne geht. Er fängt wieder an zu weinen, will nicht weggehen, fürchtet sich. Schließlich geht er doch, hat aber auf der Straße sichtlich Angst. Auf der Rückfahrt von Schönbrunn sagt er nach vielem Streben zur Mutter: Ich hab’ mich gefürchtet, daß mich ein Pferd beissen wird. (Tatsächlich wurde er in Schönbrunn unruhig, als er ein Pferd sah.) Abends soll er wieder einen ähnlichen Anfall bekommen haben wie tags vorher, mit Verlangen zu schmeicheln. Man beruhigt ihn. Er sagt weinend: »Ich weiß, ich werde morgen wieder spazierengehen müssen«, und später: »Das Pferd wird ins Zimmer kommen.«


have become enormously intensified. This was the fundamental phenomenon in his condition. In support of this, we may recall his two attempts at seducing his mother, the first of which dated back to the summer [p. 19], while the second (a simple commendation of his penis) occurred immediately before the outbreak of his street-anxiety. It was this increased affection for his mother which turned suddenly into anxiety—which, as we should say, succumbed to repression. We do not yet know from what quarter the impetus towards repression may have come. Perhaps it was merely the result of the intensity of the child's emotions, which had become greater than he could control; or perhaps other forces which we have not yet recognized were also at work. This we shall learn as we go on. Hans's anxiety, which thus corresponded to a repressed erotic longing, was, like every infantile anxiety, without an object to begin with: it was still anxiety and not yet fear. The child cannot tell [at first] what he is afraid of; and when Hans, on the first walk with the nursemaid, would not say what he was afraid of, it was simply that he himself did not yet know. He said all that he knew, which was that in the street he missed his mother, whom he could coax with, and that he did not want to be away from her. In saying this he quite straightforwardly confessed the primary meaning of his dislike of streets.

Then again, there were the states into which he fell on two consecutive evenings before going to sleep, and which were characterized by anxiety mingled with clear traces of tenderness. These states show that at the beginning of his illness there was as yet no phobia whatever present, whether of streets or of walking or even of horses. If there had been, his evening states would be inexplicable; for who bothers at bedtime about streets and walking? On the other hand, it becomes quite clear why he was so fearful in the evening, if we suppose that at bedtime he was overwhelmed by an intensification of his libido—for its object was his mother, and

Auch seine, an zwei Abenden hintereinander vor dem Schlafengehen wiederholten, ängstlichen und noch deutlich zärtlich getönten Zustände beweisen, daß zu Beginn der Erkrankung eine Phobie vor der Straße oder dem Spaziergange oder gar vor den Pferden noch gar nicht vorhanden ist. Der abendliche Zustand würde dann unerklärlich; wer denkt vor dem Zubettgehen an Straße und Spaziergang? Hingegen ist es vollkommen durchsichtig, daß er abends so ängstlich wird, wenn

Krankengeschichte und Analyse

muß sich also enorm gesteigert haben. Dies das Grundphänomen des Zustandes. Erinnern wir uns noch zur Bestätigung der beiden Verführungsversuche, die er gegen die Mutter unternimmt, von denen der erste noch in den Sommer fällt [S. 23], der zweite, knapp vor dem Ausbruche der Straßenangst, einfach eine Empfehlung seines Genitales enthält. Diese gesteigerte Zärtlichkeit für die Mutter ist es, die in Angst umschlägt, die, wie wir sagen, der Verdrängung unterliegt. Wir wissen noch nicht, woher der Anstoß zur Verdrängung stammt; vielleicht erfolgt sie bloß aus der für das Kind nicht zu bewältigenden Intensität der Regung, vielleicht wirken andere Mächte, die wir noch nicht erkennen, dabei mit. Wir werden es weiterhin erfahren. Diese, verdrängter erotischer Sehnsucht entsprechende, Angst ist zunächst wie jede Kinderangst objektlos, noch Angst und nicht Furcht. Das Kind kann nicht [anfänglich] wissen, wovor es sich fürchtet, und wenn Hans auf dem ersten Spaziergange mit dem Mädchen nicht sagen will, wovor er sich fürchtet, so weiß er es eben noch nicht. Er sagt, was er weiß, daß ihm die Mama auf der Straße fehlt, mit der er schmeicheln kann, und daß er nicht von der Mama weg will. Er verrät da in aller Aufrichtigkeit den ersten Sinn seiner Abneigung gegen die Straße.
its aim may perhaps have been to sleep with her. He had besides learnt from his experience that at Gmunden his mother could be prevailed upon, when he got into such moods, to take him into her bed, and he wanted to gain the same ends here in Vienna. Nor must we forget that for part of the time at Gmunden he had been alone with his mother, as his father had not been able to spend the whole of the holidays there, and further, that in the country his affections had been divided among a number of playmates and friends of both sexes, while in Vienna he had none, so that his libido was in a position to return undivided to his mother.

His anxiety, then, corresponded to repressed longing. But it was not the same thing as the longing: the repression must be taken into account too. Longing can be completely transformed into satisfaction if it is presented with the object longed for. Therapy of that kind is no longer effective in dealing with anxiety. The anxiety remains even when the longing can be satisfied. It can no longer be completely retransformed into libido; there is something that keeps the libido back under repression. This was shown to be so in the case of Hans on the occasion of his next walk, when his mother went with him. He was with his mother, and yet he still suffered from anxiety—that is to say, from an unsatisfied longing for her. It is true that the anxiety was less; for he did allow himself to be induced to go for the walk, whereas he had obliged the nursemaid to turn back. Nor is a street quite the right place for 'coaxing', or whatever else this young lover may have wanted. But his anxiety had stood the test; and the next thing for it to do was to find an object. It was on this walk that he first expressed a fear that a horse would bite him. Where did the material for this phobia come from?

1 To speak quite frankly, this is actually the criterion according to which we decide whether such feelings of mingled apprehension and longing are normal or not: we begin to call them 'pathological anxiety' from the moment at which they can no longer be relieved by the attainment of the object longed for.

Die Angst entspricht also verdrängter Sehnsucht, aber sie ist nicht dasselbe wie die Sehnsucht; die Verdrängung steht auch für etwas. Die Sehnsucht läßt sich voll in Befriedigung verwandeln, wenn man ihr das ersehnte Objekt zuführt; bei der Angst nützt diese Therapie nichts mehr, sie bleibt, auch wenn die Sehnsucht befriedigt sein könnte, sie ist nicht mehr voll in Libido zurückzuverwandeln; die Libido wird durch irgend etwas in der Verdrängung zurückgehalten. Dies zeigt sich bei Hans auf dem nächsten Spaziergange, den die Mutter mit ihm macht. Er ist jetzt mit der Mutter und hat doch Angst, d. h. ungestillte Sehnsucht nach ihr. Freilich, die Angst ist geringer, er läßt sich ja doch zum Spaziergange bewegen, während er das Dienstmädchen zum Umkehren gezwungen hat; auch ist die Straße nicht der richtige Ort fürs »Schmeicheln«, oder was der kleine Verliebte sonst möchte. Aber die Angst hat die Probe bestanden und muß jetzt ein Objekt finden. Auf diesem Spaziergange äußert er zunächst die Furcht, daß ihn ein Pferd beißen werde. Woher das Material dieser Phobie stammt?
Probably from the complexes, as yet unknown to us, which had contributed to the repression and were keeping under repression his libidinal feelings towards his mother. That is an unsolved problem, and we shall now have to follow the development of the case in order to arrive at its solution. Hans's father has already given us certain clues, probably trustworthy ones, such as that Hans had always observed horses with interest on account of their large widdlers, that he had supposed that his mother must have a widdler like a horse, and so on. We might thus be led to think that the horse was merely a substitute for his mother. But if so, what would be the meaning of his being afraid in the evening that a horse would come into the room? A small boy's foolish fears, it will be said. But a neurosis never says foolish things, any more than a dream. When we cannot understand something, we always fall back on abuse. An excellent way of making a task lighter.

There is another point in regard to which we must avoid giving way to this temptation. Hans admitted that every night before going to sleep he amused himself with playing with his penis. 'Ah!' the family doctor will be inclined to say, 'now we have it. The child masturbated: hence his pathological anxiety.' But gently. That the child was getting pleasure for himself by masturbating does not by any means explain his anxiety; on the contrary, it makes it more problematical than ever. States of anxiety are not produced by masturbation or by getting satisfaction in any shape. Moreover, we may presume that Hans, who was now four and three-quarters, had been indulging in this pleasure every evening for at least a year (see p. 7). And we shall find [pp. 30–1] that at this moment he was actually engaged in a struggle to break himself of the habit—a state of things which fits in much better with repression and the generation of anxiety.

We must say a word, too, on behalf of Hans's excellent and good and most assiduous mother. We shall have to follow the development of the case in order to arrive at its solution.
devoted mother. His father accuses her, not without some show of justice, of being responsible for the outbreak of the child's neurosis, on account of her excessive display of affection for him and her too frequent readiness to take him into her bed. We might as easily blame her for having precipitated the process of repression by her energetic rejection of his advances ('that'd be piggish' [p. 19]). But she had a predestined part to play, and her position was a hard one.

I arranged with Hans's father that he should tell the boy that all this business about horses was a piece of nonsense and nothing more. The truth was, his father was to say, that he was very fond of his mother and wanted to be taken into her bed. The reason he was afraid of horses now was that he had taken so much interest in their widdlers. He himself had noticed that it was not right to be so very much preoccupied with widdlers, even with his own, and he was quite right in thinking this. I further suggested to his father that he should begin giving Hans some enlightenment in the matter of sex knowledge. The child's past behaviour justified us in assuming that his libido was attached to a wish to see his mother's widdler; so I proposed to his father that he should take away this aim from Hans by informing him that his mother and all other female beings (as he could see from Hanna) had no widdler at all. This last piece of enlightenment was to be given him on a suitable occasion when it had been led up to by some question or some chance remark on Hans's part.

The next batch of news about Hans covers the period from March 1st to March 17th. The interval of more than a month will be accounted for directly.

'After Hans had been enlightened, there followed a fairly quiet period, during which he could be induced without any

\[\text{As to the meaning of his anxiety; not yet as to women having no widdlers.}\]
particular difficulty to go for his daily walk in the Stadtpark.
[See p. 99.] His fear of horses became transformed more and
more into a compulsion to look at them. He said: "I have to
look at horses, and then I'm frightened."

"After an attack of influenza, which kept him in bed for
two weeks, his phobia increased again so much that he could
not be induced to go out, or at any rate no more than on to
the balcony. Every Sunday he went with me to Lainz,1 be-
cause on that day there is not much traffic in the streets, and
it is only a short way to the station. On one occasion in Lainz
he refused to go for a walk outside the garden because there
was a carriage standing in front of it. After another week
which he has had to spend indoors because he has had his
tonsils cut, the phobia has grown very much worse again. He
goes out on to the balcony, it is true, but not for a walk.
As soon as he gets to the street door he hurriedly turns
round.

"On Sunday, March 1st, the following conversation took
place on the way to the station. I was once more trying to
explain to him that horses do not bite. He: "But white horses
bite. There's a white horse at Gmunden that bites. If you hold
your finger to it it bites." (I was struck by his saying "finger"
instead of "hand"). He then told me the following story,
which I give here in a connected form: "When Lizzi had to
go away, there was a cart with a white horse in front of her
house, to take her luggage to the station." (Lizzi, he tells me,
was a little girl who lived in a neighbouring house.) "Her
father was standing near the horse, and the horse turned its
head round (to touch him), and he said to Lizzi: 'Don't put
your finger to the white horse or it'll bite you.'" Upon this I said:
"I say, it strikes me that it isn't a horse you mean, but a
widdler, that one mustn't put one's hand to."

"He: "But a widdler doesn't bite."

1 A suburb of Vienna [just beyond Schönbrunn] where Haus's
grandparents lived.

dere Schwierigkeit zu bewegen ist, täglich in den Stadtpark spazieren-
zugehen. [Vgl. S. 87.] Seine Furcht vor Pferden verwandelt sich
mehr und mehr in den Zwang, auf Pferde hinzusehen. Er sagt: »Ich
muß auf die Pferde sehen und dann fürchte ich mich.<

Nach einer Influenza, die ihn für zwei Wochen ans Bett fesselt, verstärkt sich die Phobie wieder so sehr, daß er nicht zu bewegen ist,
auszugehen; höchstens geht er auf den Balkon. Sonntags fährt er jede
Woche mit mir nach Lainz 2, weil an diesem Tage wenig Wagen auf der
Straße zu sehen sind und er zur Bahnstation nur einen kurzen Weg
hat. In Lainz weigert er sich einmal, aus dem Garten heraus spazieren-
zugehen, weil ein Wagen vor dem Garten steht. Nach einer weiteren
Woche, die er zu Hause bleiben muß, weil ihm die Mandeln geschnitten
wurden, verstärkt sich die Phobie wieder sehr. Er geht zwar auf
den Balkon, aber nicht spazieren, d. h. er kehrt, wenn er zum Haus-
tor kommt, rasch wieder um.
I: "Perhaps it does, though." He then went on eagerly to try and prove to me that it really was a white horse.1

On March 2nd, as he again showed signs of being afraid, I said to him: "Do you know what? This nonsense of yours (that is how he speaks of his phobia) will get better if you go for more walks. It's so bad now because you haven't been able to go out because you were ill."

He: "Oh no, it's so bad because I still put my hand to my widdler every night."

Doctor and patient, father and son, were therefore at one in ascribing the chief share in the pathogenesis of Hans's present condition to his habit of masturbating.1 Indications were not wanting, however, of the presence of other significant factors.

On March 3rd we got in a new maid, whom he is particularly pleased with. She lets him ride on her back while she cleans the floor, and so he always calls her "my horse" and holds on to her dress with cries of "Gee-up". On about March 10th he said to this new nursemaid: "If you do such-and-such a thing you'll have to undress altogether, and take off your chemise even." (He meant this as a punishment, but it is easy to recognize the wish behind it.)

She: "And what'd be the harm? I'd just say to myself I haven't got any money to spend on clothes."

He: "Why, it'd be shameful. People'd see your widdler."

Here we have the same curiosity again, but directed on to a new object, and (appropriately to a period of repression) cloaked under a moralizing purpose.

On March 13th in the morning I said to Hans: "You1 Hans's father had no reason to doubt that it was a real event that the boy was describing.—I may also mention that the sensations of itching in the glans penis, which lead children to touch their genitals, are usually described by them in the phrase 'Es beißt mich' [I'm itching], literally 'it bites me'].

On March 13th we got in a new maid, whom he is particularly pleased with. She lets him ride on her back while she cleans the floor, and so he always calls her "my horse", and holds on to her dress with cries of "Gee-up". On about March 10th he said to this new nursemaid: "If you do such-and-such a thing you'll have to undress altogether, and take off your chemise even." (He meant this as a punishment, but it is easy to recognize the wish behind it.)

She: "And what'd be the harm? I'd just say to myself I haven't got any money to spend on clothes."

He: "Why, it'd be shameful. People'd see your widdler."

Here we have the same curiosity again, but directed on to a new object, and (appropriately to a period of repression) cloaked under a moralizing purpose.

On March 13th in the morning I said to Hans: "You
CASE HISTORY AND ANALYSIS

know, if you don't put your hand to your widdler any more, this nonsense of yours'll soon get better.”

'Hans: "But I don't put my hand to my widdler any more."

'I: "But you still want to."

'Hans: "Yes, I do. But wanting's not doing, and doing's not wanting." (I !)

'I: "Well, but to prevent your wanting to, this evening you're going to have a bag to sleep in."

After this we went out in front of the house. Hans was still afraid, but his spirits were visibly raised by the prospect of having his struggles made easier for him, and he said: “Oh, if I have a bag to sleep in my nonsense'll have gone tomorrow.” And, in fact, he was much less afraid of horses, and was fairly calm when vehicles drove past.

'Hans had promised to go with me to Lainz the next Sunday, March 15th. He resisted at first, but finally went with me all the same. He obviously felt all right in the street, as there was not much traffic, and said: “Oh, how sensible! God's done away with horses now.” On the way I explained to him that his sister has not got a widdler like him. Little girls and women, I said, have no widdlers: Mummy has none, Anna has none, and so on.

'Hans: "Have you got a widdler?"

'I: "Of course. Why, what do you suppose?"

'Hans (after a pause): "But how do little girls widdle, if they have no widdlers?"

'I: "They don't have widdlers like yours. Haven't you noticed already, when Hanna was being given her bath?"

All day long he was in very high spirits, went tobogganing, and so on. It was only towards evening that he fell into low spirits again and seemed to be afraid of horses.

That evening his attack of nerves and his need for being coaxed with were less pronounced than on previous days. Next day his mother took him with her into town and he was very much frightened in the streets. The day after, he stopped
at home and was very cheerful. Next morning he woke up in a fright at about six o'clock. When he was asked what was the matter he said: "I put my finger to my widdler just a very little. I saw Mummy quite naked in her chemise, and she let me see her widdler. I showed Grete,1 my Grete, what Mummy was doing, and showed her my widdler. Then I took my hand away from my widdler quick." When I objected that he could only mean "in her chemise" or "quite naked", Hans said: "She was in her chemise, but the chemise was so short that I saw her widdler."

This was none of it a dream, but a masturbatory phantasy, which was, however, equivalent to a dream. What he made his mother do was evidently intended as a piece of self-justification: 'If Mummy shows her widdler, I may too; we can gather two things from this phantasy: first, that his mother’s reproof had produced a powerful result on him at the time it was made,1 and secondly, that the enlightenment he had been given to the effect that women have no widdlers was not accepted by him at first. He regretted that it should be so, and in his phantasy he stuck to his former view. He may also perhaps have had his reasons for refusing to believe his father for the moment.

Wochenbericht des Vaters:

Er: »Nein.«

---

1 'Grete is one of the little girls at Gmunden about whom Hans is having phantasies just now; he talks and plays with her.'

2 [This presumably refers to her threat (pp. 7-8). But see the qualification of this on p. 35.]
CASE HISTORY AND ANALYSIS

'I: "But he's got a very pretty little girl."—Upon which he willingly and gladly consented.

'Sunday, March 22nd. With a view to extending the Sunday programme, I proposed to Hans that we should go first to Schönbrunn, and only go on from there to Lainz at mid-day. He had, therefore, to make his way not only from our house to the Hauptzollamt station on the Stadtbahn, but also from the Hietzing station to Schönbrunn, and again from there to the Hietzing steam tramway station. And he managed all this, looking hurriedly away whenever any horses came along, for he was evidently feeling nervous. In looking away he was following a piece of advice given him by his mother.

'At Schönbrunn he showed signs of fear at animals which on other occasions he had looked at without any alarm. Thus he absolutely refused to go into the house in which the giraffe is kept, nor would he visit the elephant, which used formerly to amuse him a great deal. He was afraid of all the large animals, whereas he was very much entertained by the small ones. Among the birds, he was also afraid of the pelican this time—which had never happened before—evidently because of its size again.

'I therefore said to him: "Do you know why you're afraid of big animals? Big animals have big widdlers, and you're really afraid of big widdlers."

'Hans: "But I've never seen the big animals' widdlers yet."

'I: "But you have seen a horse's, and a horse is a big animal."

'Hans: "Oh, a horse's often. Once at Gmunden when the

1 [The Head Customs House station on the Vienna local and suburban railway. Hietzing is a suburb which adjoins the palace of Schönbrunn.]

2 This was untrue. See his exclamation in front of the lions' cage on p. 9. It was probably the beginning of amnesia resulting from repression.
cart was standing at the door, and once in front of the Head Customs House."

'I: "When you were small, you most likely went into a stable at Gmunden..."

'Hans (interrupting): "Yes, I went into the stable every day at Gmunden when the horses had come home."

'I: "... and you were most likely frightened when you saw the horse's big widdler one time. But there's no need for you to be frightened of it. Big animals have big widdlers, and little animals have little widdlers."

'Hans: "And every one has a widdler. And my widdler will get bigger as I get bigger; it's fixed in, of course."

'Here the talk came to an end. During the next few days it seemed as though his fears had again somewhat increased. He hardly ventured out of the front door, to which he was taken after luncheon."

'Hans's last words of comfort throw a light upon the situation and allow us to make some small corrections in his father's assertions. It is true that he was afraid of big animals because he was obliged to think of their big widdlers; but it cannot really be said that he was afraid of big widdlers themselves. Formerly the idea of them had been decidedly pleasurable to him, and he used to make every effort to get a glimpse of one. Since that time this enjoyment had been spoiled for him, owing to the general reversal of pleasure into unpleasure which had come over the whole of his sexual researches—in a way which has not yet been explained—and also owing to something which is clearer to us, namely, to certain experiences and reflections which had led to distressing conclusions. We may infer from his self-consolatory words ('my widdler will get bigger as I get bigger') that during his observations he had constantly been making comparisons, and that he had remained extremely dissatisfied with the size of his own widdler. Big animals reminded him of his defect, and were for that reason disagreeable to him. But since the whole train..."
of thought was probably incapable of becoming clearly conscious, this distressing feeling, too, was transformed into anxiety, so that his present anxiety was erected both upon his former pleasure and his present unpleasure. When once a state of anxiety establishes itself, the anxiety swallows up all other feelings; with the progress of repression, and the more those ideas which are charged with affect and which have been conscious move down into the unconscious, all affects are capable of being changed into anxiety.

Hans's singular remark, 'it's fixed in, of course', makes it possible to guess many things in connection with his consolatory speech which he could not express in words and did not express during the course of the analysis. I shall bridge the gap for a little distance by means of my experiences in the analyses of grown-up people; but I hope the interpolation will not be considered arbitrary or capricious. 'It's fixed in, of course': if the motives of the thought were solace and defiance, we are reminded of his mother's old threat that she should have his widdler cut off if he went on playing with it. [See pp. 7–8.] At the time it was made, when he was three and a half, this threat had no effect. He calmly replied that then he should widdle with his bottom. It would be the most completely typical procedure if the threat of castration were to have a deferred effect, and if he were now, a year and a quarter later, oppressed by the fear of having to lose this precious piece of his ego. In other cases of illness we can observe a similar deferred operation of commands and threats made in childhood, where the interval covers as many decades or more. I even know cases in which a 'deferred obedience' under the influence of repression has had a principal share in determining the symptoms of the disease.

1 [Another instance of 'deferred obedience' will be found in the third section of Freud's paper on a 'demonological neurosis' (1923d). A sociological application of the concept appears in the last essay in Totem and Taboo (1912–13), Standard Ed., 13, 149.]
36 A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

The piece of enlightenment which Hans had been given a short time before to the effect that women really do not possess a widdler was bound to have had a shattering effect upon his self-confidence and to have aroused his castration complex. For this reason he resisted the information, and for this reason it had no therapeutic results. Could it be that living beings really did exist which did not possess widdlers? If so, it would no longer be so incredible that they could take his own widdler away, and, as it were, make him into a woman! 1

'During the night of 27th-28th Hans surprised us by getting out of bed while it was quite dark and coming into our bed. His room is separated from our bedroom by another small room. We asked him why: whether he had been afraid, perhaps. "No," he said; "I'll tell you to-morrow." He went to sleep in our bed and was then carried back to his own.

'Next day I questioned him closely to discover why he had come in to us during the night; and after some reluctance the

1 I cannot interrupt the discussion so far as to demonstrate the typical character of the unconscious train of thought which I think there is here reason for attributing to little Hans. The castration complex is the deepest unconscious root of anti-semitism; for even in the nursery little boys hear that a Jew has something cut off his penis—a piece of his penis, they think—and this gives them a right to despise Jews. And there is no stronger unconscious root for the sense of superiority over women. Weininger, the young philosopher who, highly gifted but sexually deranged, committed suicide after producing his remarkable book, Geschlecht und Charakter [1903], in a chapter that attracted much attention, treated Jews and women with equal hostility and overwhelmed them with the same insults. Being a neurotic, Weininger was completely under the sway of his infantile complexes; and from that standpoint what is common to Jews and women is their relation to the castration complex. [A more elaborate analysis of anti-semitism will be found in one of Freud's last writings, Moses and Monothethism (1939a, Chapter III, Part I, last pages of Section D).]

In the night of 27th-28th, Hans surprised us by getting out of bed while it was quite dark and coming into our bed. His room is separated from our bedroom by another small room. We asked him why: whether he had been afraid, perhaps. "No," he said; "I’l tell you to-morrow." He went to sleep in our bed and was then carried back to his own.

In the night of 27th-28th, Hans surprised us by getting out of bed while it was quite dark and coming into our bed. His room is separated from our bedroom by another small room. We asked him why: whether he had been afraid, perhaps. "No," he said; "I’l tell you to-morrow." He went to sleep in our bed and was then carried back to his own.

Next day I questioned him closely to discover why he had come in to us during the night; and after some reluctance the

2 I cannot interrupt the discussion so far as to demonstrate the typical character of the unconscious train of thought which I think there is here reason for attributing to little Hans. The castration complex is the deepest unconscious root of anti-semitism; for even in the nursery little boys hear that a Jew has something cut off his penis—a piece of his penis, they think—and this gives them a right to despise Jews. And there is no stronger unconscious root for the sense of superiority over women. Weininger, the young philosopher who, highly gifted but sexually deranged, committed suicide after producing his remarkable book, Geschlecht und Charakter [1903], in a chapter that attracted much attention, treated Jews and women with equal hostility and overwhelmed them with the same insults. Being a neurotic, Weininger was completely under the sway of his infantile complexes; and from that standpoint what is common to Jews and women is their relation to the castration complex. [A more elaborate analysis of anti-semitism will be found in one of Freud's last writings, Moses and Monothethism (1939a, Chapter III, Part I, last pages of Section D).]

Am nächsten Tage nanhe ich ihn ins Gebet, um zu erfahren, weshalb er in der Nacht zu uns gekommen ist, und es entwickelt sich nach

A Phobia in a Five-Year-Old Boy

Die Aufklärung, die Hans vor kurzem erhalten hat, daß Frauen wirklich keinen Widdler haben, kann nur erschütternd auf sein Selbstvertrauen und erweckend auf den Kastrationskomplex gewirkt haben. Darum straubte er sich auch gegen sie, und darum blieb ein therapeutischer Erfolg dieser Mitteilung aus: Soll es also wirklich lebende Wesen geben, die keinen Widdler besitzen? Dann wäre es ja nicht mehr so unglaublich, daß man ihm den Widdler wegnahmen, ihn gleichsam zum Weibe machen könnte!

CASE HISTORY AND ANALYSIS

following dialogue took place, which I immediately took down in shorthand:

‘He: “In the night there was a big giraffe in the room and a crumpled one; and the big one called out because I took the crumpled one away from it. Then it stopped calling out; and then I sat down on top of the crumpled one.”

‘I (puzzled): “What? A crumpled giraffe? How was that?”

‘He: “Yes.” (He quickly fetched a piece of paper, crumpled it up, and said:) “It was crumpled like that.”

‘I: “And you sat down on top of the crumpled giraffe? How?”

‘He again showed me, by sitting down on the ground.

‘I: “Why did you come into our room?”

‘He: “I don’t know myself.”

‘I: “Were you afraid?”

‘He: “No. Of course not.”

‘I: “Did you dream about the giraffe?”

‘He: “No. I didn’t dream. I thought it. I thought it all. I’d woken up earlier.”

‘I: “What can it mean: a crumpled giraffe? You know you can’t squash a giraffe together like a piece of paper.”

‘He: “Of course I know. I just thought it. Of course there aren’t any really and truly.¹ The crumpled one was all lying on the floor, and I took it away—took hold of it with my hands.”

‘I: “What? Can you take hold of a big giraffe like that with your hands?”

‘He: “I took hold of the crumpled one with my hand.”

‘I: “Where was the big one meanwhile?”

‘He: “The big one just stood farther off.”

‘I: “What did you do with the crumpled one?”

‘He: “I held it in my hand for a bit, till the big one had

¹ In his own language Hans was saying quite definitely that it was a phantasy.

einigem Strauben folgender Dialog, den ich sofort stenographisch festlege:

Er: »In der Nacht war eine große und eine zerwutzelte Giraffe im Zimmer, und die große hat geschrien, weil ich ihr die zerwutzelte weggenommen hab’. Dann hat sie aufgehört zu schreien, und dann hab’ ich mich auf die zerwutzelte Giraffe draufgesetzt.«

Ich, befremdet: »Was? Eine zerwutzelte Giraffe? Wie war das?«

Er: »Ja.« (Holt schnell ein Papier, wutzelt es zusammen und sagt mir:) »So war sie zerwutelt.«

Ich: »Und du hast dich auf die zerwutzelte Giraffe draufgesetzt? Wie?«

Er zeigt mir’s wieder, setzt sich auf die Erde.

Ich: »Weshalb bist du ins Zimmer gekommen?«

Er: »Das weiß ich selber nicht.«

Ich: »Hast du dich gefürchtet?«

Er: »Nein, bestimmt nicht.«

Ich: »Hast du von den Giraffen geträumt?«

Er: »Nein, nicht geträumt; ich hab’ mir’s gedacht – das Ganze hab’ ich mir gedacht – aufgekommen war ich schon früher.«

Ich: »Was soll das heißen: eine zerwutzelte Giraffe? Du weißt ja, daß man eine Giraffe nicht zusammendrücken kann wie ein Stück Papier.«

Er: »Ich weiß ja. Ich hab’s halt geglaubt. Es gibt’s ja eh net auf der Welt¹. Die zerwutzelte ist ganz gelegen auf dem Fußboden, und ich hab’ sie weggenommen, mit den Händen genommen.«

Ich: »Was, so eine große Giraffe kann man mit den Händen nehmen?«

Er: »Die zerwutzelte hab’ ich mit der Hand genommen.«

Ich: »Wo war die große unterdessen?«

Er: »Die große ist halt weiter weg gestanden.«

Ich: »Was hast du mit der zerwutzelten gemacht?«

Er: »Ich hab’ sie ein bißchen in der Hand gehalten, bis die große zu

¹ Hans sagt es ganz bestimmt in seiner Sprache, es war eine Phantasie.
stopped calling out. And when the big one had stopped calling out, I sat down on top of it."

'I: "Why did the big one call out?"

'He: "Because I'd taken away the little one from it." (He noticed that I was taking everything down, and asked:)

"Why are you writing that down?"

'I: "Because I shall send it to a Professor, who can take away your 'nonsense' for you."

'He: "Oh! So you've written down as well that Mummy took off her chemise, and you'll give that to the Professor too."

'I: "Yes. But he won't understand how you can think that a giraffe can be crumpled up."

'He: "Just tell him I don't know myself, and then he won't ask. But if he asks what the crumpled giraffe is, then he can write to us, and we can write back, or let's write at once that I don't know myself."

'I: "But why did you come in in the night?"

'He: "I don't know."

'I: "Just tell me quickly what you're thinking of."

'He (jokingly): "Of raspberry syrup."

'I: "What else?"

'He: "A gun for shooting people dead with." [He wishes.]

'I: "You're sure you didn't dream it?"

'He: "Quite sure; no, I'm quite certain of it."

'He proceeded: "Mummy begged me so long to tell her why I came in in the night. But I didn't want to say, because I felt ashamed with Mummy at first."

'I: "Why?"

'He: "I didn't know."

'My wife had in fact examined him all the morning, till he had told her the giraffe story."

1 At this point his father in his perplexity was trying to practise the classical technique of psycho-analysis. This did not lead to much; but the result, such as it was, can be given a meaning in the light of later disclosures. [See pp. 99 and 112 n.]

Er: »Weil ich dir die kleinen weggenommen hab'. « (Bemerk, daß ich alles nötig, und fragt: »Weshalb schreibst du das auf?«)

Ich: »Weil ich es einem Professor schicke, der dir die 'Dummheit' wegnehmen kann.«

Er: »Aha, da hast du's doch auch aufgeschrieben, daß sich die Mammi das Hemd ausgezogen hat, und gibst das auch dem Professor.«

Ich: »Ja, der wird aber nicht verstehen, wie du glaubst, daß man eine Giraffe zerwuzteln kann.«

Er: »Sag' ihm halt, ich weiß es selber nicht, und da wird er nicht fragen; wenn er aber fragt, was die verwuztelte Giraffe ist, kann er uns ja schreiben, und wir schreiben hin oder schreiben wir gleich, ich weiß es selber nicht.«

Ich: »Weshalb bist du aber in der Nacht gekommen?«

Er: »Das weiß ich nicht.«

Ich: »Sag' mir halt schnell, woran du jetzt denkst.«

Er (humoristisch): »An einen Himbeersaft. « [Seine Wünsche]

Ich: »Du hast es gewiß nicht geträumt?«

Er: »Sicher nicht; nein, ich weiß es ganz bestimmt.«

Er erzählt weiter: »Die Mammi hat mich so lange gebeten, ich soll ihr sagen, weshalb ich in der Nacht gekommen bin. Ich hab's aber nicht sagen wollen, weil ich mich zuerst vor der Mammi geschämt hab'.«

Ich: »Weshalb?«

Er: »Das weiß ich nicht.«

Tatsächlich hat ihn meine Frau den ganzen Vormittag inquiriert, bis er die Giraffengeschichte erzählt hat.

1 Der Vater versucht hier in seiner Ratlosigkeit, die klassische Technik der Psychoanalyse zu üben. Diese führt nicht weit, aber was sie ergibt, kann doch im Licht späterer Eröffnungen sinnvoll werden. [Vgl. S. 87 und S. 97, Anm. 1.]
That same day his father discovered the solution of the giraffe phantasy.

'The big giraffe is myself, or rather my big penis (the long neck), and the crumpled giraffe is my wife, or rather her genital organ. It is therefore the result of the enlightenment he has had [p. 31].

'Giraffe: see the expedition to Schönbrunn. [Cf. pp. 13 and 33.] Moreover, he has a picture of a giraffe and an elephant hanging over his bed.

'The whole thing is a reproduction of a scene which has been gone through almost every morning for the last few days. Hans always comes in to us in the early morning, and my wife cannot resist taking him into bed with her for a few minutes. Thereupon I always begin to warn her not to take him into bed with her ('the big one called out because I'd taken the crumpled one away from it'); and she answers now and then, rather irritated, no doubt, that it's all nonsense, that after all one minute is of no importance, and so on. Then Hans stays with her a little while. ('Then the big giraffe stopped calling out; and then I sat down on top of the crumpled one."

'Thus the solution of this matrimonial scene transposed into giraffe life is this: he was seized in the night with a longing for his mother, for her caresses, for her genital organ, and came into our bedroom for that reason. The whole thing is a continuation of his fear of horses.'

I have only this to add to his father's penetrating interpretation. The 'sitting down on top of' was probably Hans's representation of taking possession.¹ But the whole thing was a phantasy of defiance connected with his satisfaction at the triumph over his father's resistance. 'Call out as much as you like! But Mummy takes me into bed all the same, and

¹ [The German word for 'possession' ('Besitz') shows its etymological connection with the phrase used by little Hans ('sich draufsetzen') more obviously than the English.]
Mummy belongs to me! It is therefore justifiable, as his father suspected, to divine behind the phantasy a fear that his mother did not like him, because his widdler was not comparable to his father's.

Next morning his father was able to get his interpretation confirmed.

'On Sunday, March 29th, I went with Hans to Lainz. I jokingly took leave of my wife at the door with the words: “Good-bye, big giraffe!” “Why giraffe?” asked Hans. “Mummy's the big giraffe,” I replied; to which Hans rejoined: “Oh yes! And Hanna's the crumpled giraffe, isn't she?”

'In the train I explained the giraffe phantasy to him, upon which he said: “Yes, that's right.” And when I said to him that I was the big giraffe, and that its long neck had reminded him of a widdler, he said: “Mummy has a neck like a giraffe, too. I saw, when she was washing her white neck.”

'On Monday, March 30th, in the morning, Hans came to me and said: “I say! I thought two things this morning!” “What was the first?” “I was with you at Schönbrunn where the sheep are; and then we crawled through under the ropes, and then we told the policeman at the end of the garden, and he grabbed hold of us.” He had forgotten the second thing.

'I can add the following comment on this. When we wanted to visit the sheep on Sunday, we found that a space in the gardens was shut off by a rope, so that we were unable to get to them. Hans was very much astonished that the space should be shut off only with a rope, which it would be quite easy to slip under. I told him that respectable people didn't crawl under the rope. He said it would be quite easy; whereupon I replied that a policeman might come along and take one off. There is a lifeguardsman on duty at the entrance of

1 Hans only confirmed the interpretation of the two giraffes as his father and mother, and not the sexual symbolism, according to which the giraffe itself represented the penis. This symbolism was probably correct, but we really cannot ask more of Hans.
Schönbrunn; and I once told Hans that he arrested naughty children.

‘After we returned from our visit to you, which took place the same day, Hans confessed to yet another little bit of craving to do something forbidden: “I say, I thought something this morning again.” “What?” “I went with you in the train, and we smashed a window and the policeman took us off with him.”’

A most suitable continuation of the giraffe phantasy. He had a suspicion that to take possession of his mother was forbidden; he had come up against the barrier against incest. But he regarded it as forbidden in itself. His father was with him each time in the forbidden exploits which he carried out in his imagination, and was locked up with him. His father, he thought, also did that enigmatic forbidden something with his mother which he replaced by an act of violence such as smashing a window-pane or forcing a way into an enclosed space.

That afternoon the father and son visited me during my consulting hours. I already knew the funny little fellow, and with all his self-assurance he was yet so amiable that I had always been glad to see him. I do not know whether he remembered me, but he behaved irreproachably and like a perfectly reasonable member of human society. The consultation was a short one. His father opened it by remarking that, in spite of all the pieces of enlightenment we had given Hans, his fear of horses had not yet diminished. We were also forced to confess that the connections between the horses he was afraid of and the affectionate feelings towards his mother which had been revealed were by no means abundant. Certain details which I now learnt—to the effect that he was particularly bothered by what horses wear in front of their eyes and by the black round their mouths—were certainly

1 [S. den letzten Abschnitt der dritten von Freuds Drei Abhandlungen zur Sexualtheorie (1905 d).]
not to be explained from what we knew. But as I saw the two of them sitting in front of me and at the same time heard Hans's description of his anxiety-horses, a further piece of the solution shot through my mind, and a piece which I could well understand might escape his father. I asked Hans jokingly whether his horses wore eyeglasses, to which he replied that they did not. I then asked him whether his father wore eyeglasses, to which, against all the evidence, he once more said no. Finally I asked him whether by 'the black round the mouth' he meant a moustache; and I then disclosed to him that he was afraid of his father, precisely because he was so fond of his mother. It must be, I told him, that he thought his father was angry with him on that account; but this was not so, his father was fond of him in spite of it, and he might admit everything to him without any fear. Long before he was in the world, I went on, I had known that a little Hans would come who would be so fond of his mother that he would be bound to feel afraid of his father because of it; and I had told his father this. 'But why do you think I'm angry with you?' his father interrupted me at this point; 'have I ever scolded you or hit you?' Hans corrected him: 'Oh yes! You have hit me.' 'That's not true. When was it, anyhow?' 'This morning,' answered the little boy; and his father recollected that Hans had quite unexpectedly butted his head into his stomach, so that he had given him as it were a reflex blow with his hand. It was remarkable that he had not brought this detail into connection with the neurosis; but he now recognized it as an expression of the little boy's hostile disposition towards him, and perhaps also as a manifestation of a need for getting punished for it.1

'Does the Professor talk to God,' Hans asked his father on the

1 Later on the boy repeated his reaction towards his father in a clearer and more complete manner, by first hitting his father on the hand and then affectionately kissing the same hand. —[Cf. in this connection the third part of Freud's paper on 'Character Types' (1916d).]
the way home, 'as he can tell all that beforehand? I should
be extraordinarily proud of this recognition out of the mouth
of a child, if I had not myself provoked it by my joking boast­
fulness. From the date of this consultation I received almost
daily reports of the alterations in the little patient's condition.
It was not to be expected that he should be freed from his
anxiety at a single blow by the information I gave him; but
it became apparent that a possibility had now been offered
him of bringing forward his unconscious productions and of
unfolding his phobia. From that time forward he carried out
a programme which I was able to announce to his father in
advance.

'April 2nd. The first real improvement is to be noted. While
formerly he could never be induced to go out of the street­
door for very long, and always ran back into the house with
every sign of fright if horses came along, this time he stayed
in front of the street-door for an hour—even while carts were
driving past, which happens fairly often in our street. Every
now and then he ran into the house when he saw a cart
approaching in the distance, but he turned round at once as
though he were changing
his
mind. In any case there is only
a trace of the anxiety left, and the progress since his enlight­
enment is unmistakable.

'In the evening he said: "We get as far as the street-door
now, so we'll go into the Stadtpark too."

'On April 3rd, in the morning he came into bed with me,
whereas for the last few days he had not been coming any
more and had even seemed to be proud of not doing so. "And
why have you come to-day?" I asked.
'Hans: "When I'm not frightened I shan't come any
more."
'I: "So you come in to me because you're frightened?"
'Hans: "When I'm not with you I'm frightened; when I'm

Am 2. April ist die erste wesentliche Besserung festzustellen. Während
er bisher nie zu bewegen war, für längere Zeit vor dem Haustor zu
gehen, und immer, wenn Pferde kamen, mit allen Zeichen des Schrek­
kens zurück ins Haus rannte, bleibt er diesmal eine Stunde vor dem
Haustore, auch wenn Wagen vorüberfahren, was bei uns ziemlich
häufig vorkommt. Hie und da läuft er, wenn er von ferne einen Wa­
gen kommen sieht, ins Haus, kehrt jedoch sofort um, als ob er sich
anders besinnen würde. Es ist jedenfalls nur ein Rest von Angst vor­
händen und der Fortschritt seit der Aufklärung nicht zu verkennen.

Abends sagt er: »Wenn wir schon vor dem Haustor gehen, werden wir
auch in den Stadtpark gehen.«

Am 3. April kommt er früh zu mir ins Bett, während er die letzten
Tage nicht mehr gekommen war und sogar stolz auf diese Enthaltung
schien. Ich frage: »Weshalb bist du denn heute gekommen?«
'Hans: »Bis ich mich nicht fürchten werde, werde ich nicht mehr
kommen.«

Ich: »Du kommst also zu mir, weil du dich fürchtetest?«
'Hans: »Wenn ich nicht bei dir bin, fürchte ich mich; wenn ich nicht
not in bed with you, then I’m frightened. When I’m not frightened any more I shan’t come any more.”

‘I: “So you’re fond of me and you feel anxious when you’re in your bed in the morning? and that’s why you come in to me?”

‘Hans: “Yes. Why did you tell me I’m fond of Mummy and that’s why I’m frightened, when I’m fond of you?”

Here the little boy was displaying a really unusual degree of clarity. He was bringing to notice the fact that his love for his father was wrestling with his hostility towards him in his capacity of rival with his mother; and he was reproaching his father with not having yet drawn his attention to this interplay of forces, which was bound to end in anxiety. His father did not entirely understand him as yet, for during this conversation he only succeeded in convincing himself of the little boy’s hostility towards him, the existence of which I had asserted during our consultation. The following dialogue, which I nevertheless give without alteration, is really of more importance in connection with the progress of the father’s enlightenment than with the little patient.

‘Unfortunately I did not immediately grasp the meaning of this reproach. Because Hans is fond of his mother he evidently wants to get me out of the way, and he would then be in his father’s place. This suppressed hostile wish is turned into anxiety about his father, and he comes in to me in the morning to see if I have gone away. Unfortunately at the moment I did not understand this, and said to him:

“ ‘When you’re alone, you’re just anxious for me and come in to me.”

‘Hans: “When you’re away, I’m afraid you’re not coming home.”

‘I: “And have I ever threatened you that I shan’t come home?”

‘Hans: “Not you, but Mummy. Mummy’s told me she...
won't come back.” (He had probably been naughty, and she had threatened to go away.)

'I: “She said that because you were naughty.”

'Hans: “Yes.”

'I: “So you're afraid I'm going away because you were naughty; that's why you come in to me.”

'When I got up from table after breakfast Hans said: “Daddy, don't trot away from me!” I was struck by his saying “trot” instead of “run”, and replied: “Oho! So you're afraid of the horse trotting away from you.” Upon which he laughed.'

We know that this portion of Hans's anxiety had two constituents: there was fear of his father and fear for his father. The former was derived from his hostility towards his father, and the latter from the conflict between his affection, which was exaggerated at this point by way of compensation, and his hostility.

His father proceeds: 'This is no doubt the beginning of an important phase. His motive for at the most just venturing outside the house but not going away from it, and for turning round at the first attack of anxiety when he is half-way, is his fear of not finding his parents at home because they have gone away. He sticks to the house from love of his mother, and he is afraid of my going away because of the hostile wishes that he nourishes against me—for then he would be the father.

'In the summer I used to be constantly leaving Gmunden for Vienna on business, and he was then the father. You will remember that his fear of horses is connected with the episode at Gmunden when a horse was to take Lizzi's luggage to the station [p. 29]. The repressed wish that I should drive to the station, for then he would be alone with his mother (the wish that “the horse should drive off”), is turned into fear of the horse's driving off; and in fact nothing throws him into greater alarm than when a cart drives off from the
courtyard of the Head Customs House (which is just opposite our flat) and the horses start moving.

'This new phase (hostile sentiments towards his father) could only come out after he knew that I was not angry because he was so fond of his mother.

'In the afternoon I went out in front of the street-door with him again; he again went out in front of the house, and stayed there even when carts went past. In the case of a few carts only he was afraid, and ran into the entrance-hall. He also said to me in explanation: "Not all white horses bite." That is to say: owing to the analysis some white horses have already been recognized as "Daddy", and they no longer bite; but there are others still left over which do bite.

'The position of our street-door is as follows: Opposite it is the warehouse of the Office for the Taxation of Food-Stuffs, with a loading dock at which carts are driving up all day long to fetch away boxes, packing-cases, etc. This courtyard is cut off from the street by railings; and the entrance gates to the courtyard are opposite our house (Fig. 2). I have noticed for some days that Hans is specially frightened when carts drive into or out of the yard, a process which involves their taking a corner. I asked at the time why he was so much afraid, and he replied: "I'm afraid the horses will fall down when the cart turns" (a). He is equally frightened when carts standing at the loading dock start moving in order to drive off (b). Further
(c), he is more frightened of large dray-horses than of small horses, and of rough farm-horses than of smart horses (such as those in a carriage and pair). He is also more frightened when a vehicle drives past quickly (d) than when the horses trot up slowly. These differentiations have, of course, only come to light clearly during the last few days.

I should be inclined to say that, in consequence of the analysis, not only the patient but his phobia too had plucked up courage and was venturing to show itself. [Cf. p. 124.]

‘On April 5th Hans came in to our bedroom again, and was sent back to his own bed. I said to him: “As long as you come into our room in the mornings, your fear of horses won’t get better.” He was defiant, however, and replied: “I shall come in all the same, even if I am afraid.” So he will not let himself be forbidden to visit his mother.

‘After breakfast we were to go downstairs. Hans was delighted, and planned that, instead of stopping in front of the street-door as usual, he should go across the street into the yard, where he had often enough seen street-boys playing. I told him I should be pleased if he were to go across, and took the opportunity of asking him why he is so much afraid when the loaded carts at the loading dock start moving (b).

‘Hans: “I’m afraid of standing by the cart and the cart driving off quick, and of my standing on it and wanting to get on to the board (the loading dock), and my driving off in the cart.”

‘I: “And if the cart stands still? Aren’t you afraid then? Why not?”

‘Hans: “If the cart stands still, then I can get on to the cart quick and get on to the board.” [Fig. 3.]

“(So Hans is planning to climb over a cart on to the loading dock, and is afraid of the cart driving away while he is on it.)

‘I: “Perhaps you’re afraid you won’t come home any more if you drive away in the cart?”

Krankengeschichte und Analyse

Er fürchtet sich ferner (C) vor großen Lastpferden mehr als vor kleinen Pferden, vor bäuerlichen Pferden mehr als vor eleganten (wie z. B. Fia- ken-)Pferden. Auch fürchtet er sich mehr, wenn ein Wagen schnell vorüberfährt (D), als wenn die Pferde langsam dahertrotten. Diese Differenzierungen sind natürlich erst in den letzten Tagen deutlich hervorgetreten. Ich möchte sagen, infolge der Analyse hat nicht nur der Patient, sondern auch seine Phobie mehr Courage bekommen und wagt es, sich zu zeigen. [Vgl. S. 105.]

Am 5. April kommt Hans wieder ins Schlafzimmer und wird in sein Bett zurückgeschickt. Ich sage ihm: »Solange du früh ins Zimmer kommst, wird die Pferdeangst nicht besser werden.« Er trotzt aber und antwortet: »Ich werde doch kommen, auch wenn ich mich fürchte.« Er will sich also den Besuch bei der Mama nicht verbieten lassen.

Nach dem Frühstück sollen wir hinuntergehen. Hans freut sich sehr darauf und plant, anstatt wie gewöhnlich vor dem Haustore zu bleiben, über die Gasse in den Hofraum zu gehen, wo er oft genug Gasenbuben spielen sah. Ich sage ihm, es werde mich freuen, wenn er hinübergehen werde, und benütze die Gelegenheit, um zu fragen, weshalb er sich so fürchtet, wenn die beladenen Wagen sich an der Verladungsrampe in Bewegung setzen (B).

Hans: »Ich fürchte mich, wenn ich am Wagen steh’ und der Wagen geschwind wegfährt, und ich steh’ drauf und ich will dort auf das Brett gehen (die Verladungsrampe) und ich fahre mit dem Wagen weg.«

Ich: »Und wenn der Wagen steht? Dann fürchtest du dich nicht? Weshalb nicht?«

Hans: »Wenn der Wagen steht, geh’ ich geschwind auf den Wagen und geh’ auf das Brett.« [Fig. 3.]

(Hans plant also, über einen Wagen auf die Verladungsrampe zu klettern und fürchtet sich, daß der Wagen davonfährt, wenn er auf dem Wagen oben ist.)

Ich: »Fürchtest du dich vielleicht, daß du nicht mehr nach Hause kommst, wenn du mit dem Wagen davongehst?«
‘Hans: “Oh no! I can always come back to Mummy, in the cart or in a cab. I can tell him the number of the house too.”

‘I: “Then why are you afraid?”

‘Hans: “I don’t know. But the Professor’ll know. D’you think he’ll know?”

‘I: “And why do you want to get over on to the board?”

‘Hans: “Because I’ve never been up there, and I should so much like to be there; and d’you know why I should like to go there? Because I should like to load and unload the boxes, and I should like to climb about on the boxes there. I should so like to climb about there. D’you know who I learnt the climbing about from? Some boys climbed on the boxes, and I saw them, and I want to do it too.”

‘His wish was not fulfilled. For when Hans ventured once more in front of the street-door, the few steps across the street and into the courtyard awoke too great resistances in him, because carts were constantly driving into the yard.’

The Professor only knows that the game which Hans intended to play with the loaded carts must have stood in the relation of a symbolic substitute to some other wish as to which he had so far uttered no word. But, if it did not seem too daring, this wish might already, even at this stage, be constructed.

‘In the afternoon we again went out in front of the street-door, and when I returned I asked Hans:

‘“Which horses are you actually most afraid of?”

‘Hans: “All of them.”
CASE HISTORY AND ANALYSIS

"I: "That's not true."

'Hans: "I'm most afraid of horses with a thing on their mouths."

'I: "What do you mean? The piece of iron they have in their mouths?"

'Hans: "No, they have something black on their mouths."

(He covered his mouth with his hand.)

'I: "What? A moustache, perhaps?"

'Hans (laughing): "Oh no!"

'I: "Have they all got it?"

'Hans: "No, only a few of them."

'I: "What is it that they've got on their mouths?"

'Hans: "A black thing." (I think in reality it must be the thick piece of harness that dray-horses wear over their noses.) [Fig. 4.]

"And I'm most afraid of furniture-vans, too."

'I: "Why?"

'Hans: "I think when furniture-horses are dragging a heavy van they'll fall down."

'I: "So you're not afraid with a small cart?"

'Hans: "No, I'm not afraid with a small cart or with a post-office van. I'm most afraid too when a bus comes along."

'I: "Why? Because it's so big?"

'Hans: "No. Because once a horse in a bus fell down."

'I: "When?"

'Hans: "Once when I went out with Mummy in spite of my 'nonsense', when I bought the waistcoat." (This was subsequently confirmed by his mother.)

'I: "What did you think when the horse fell down?"

'Hans: "Now it'll always be like this. All horses in buses'll fall down."

'I: "In all buses?"

---

Krankengeschichte und Analyse

Ich: »Das ist nicht wahr.«

Hans: »Am meisten fürcht' ich mich vor den Pferden, die am Munde so etwas haben.«

Ich: »Was meinst du? Das Eisen, das sie im Munde haben?«

Hans: »Nein, sie haben etwas Schwarzes am Munde (deckt seinen Mund mit der Hand zu).«

Ich: »Was, vielleicht einen Schnurrbart?«

Hans (lacht): »O nein.«

Ich: »Haben das alle?«

Hans: »Nein, nur einige.«

Ich: »Was ist das, was sie am Munde haben?«

Hans: »So etwas Schwarzes.« – Ich glaube, es ist in der Realität das dicke Riemenzug der Lastpferde über der Schnauze [Fig. 4].

»Auch vor einem Möbelwagen fürcht' ich mich am meisten.«

Ich: »Warum?«

Hans: »Ich glaub', wenn die Möbelpferde einen schweren Wagen ziehen, fallen sie um.«

Ich: »Bei einem kleinen Wagen fürchtest du dich also nicht?«

Hans: »Nein, bei einem kleinen Wagen und einem Postwagen fürcht' ich mich nicht. Auch wenn ein Stellwagen kommt, fürcht' ich mich am meisten.«

Ich: »Warum, weil er so groß ist?«

Hans: »Nein, weil einmal bei so einem Wagen ein Pferd umgefallen ist.«

Ich: »Wann?«

Hans: »Einmal, wie ich mit der Mammi gegangen bin trotz der »Dummheit«, wie ich die Weste gekauft hab'.«

(Dies wird nachträglich von der Mutter bestätigt.)

Ich: »Was hast du dir gedacht, wie das Pferd umgefallen ist?«

Hans: »Das wird jetzt immer sein. Alle Pferde werden beim Stellwagen umfallen.«

Ich: »Bei jedem Stellwagen?«
Hans: "Yes. And in furniture-vans too. Not often in furniture-vans."

'I: "You had your nonsense already at that time?"

Hans: "No. I only got it then. When the horse in the bus fell down, it gave me such a fright, really! That was when I got the nonsense."

'I: "But the nonsense was that you thought a horse would bite you. And now you say you were afraid a horse would fall down."

Hans: "Fall down and bite."

'I: "Why did it give you such a fright?"

Hans: "Because the horse went like this with its feet." (He lay down on the ground and showed me how it kicked about.) "It gave me a fright because it made a row with its feet."

'I: "Where did you go with Mummy that day?"

Hans: "First to the Skating Rink, then to a café, then to buy a waistcoat, then to the pastry-cook's with Mummy, and then home in the evening; we went back through the Stadt­park." (All of this was confirmed by my wife, as well as the fact that the anxiety broke out immediately afterwards.)

'I: "Was the horse dead when it fell down?"

Hans: "Yes!"

'I: "How do you know that?"

Hans: "Because I saw it." (He laughed.) "No, it wasn't a bit dead."

'I: "Perhaps you thought it was dead?"

Hans: "No. Certainly not. I only said it as a joke." (His expression at the moment, however, had been serious.)

As he was tired, I let him run off. He only told me besides

1 [In the editions before 1924 this was wrongly given as 'furniture-van.'].

Hans was right, however improbable this collocation may sound. The train of thought, as we shall see, was that the horse (his father) would bite him because of his wish that it (his father) should fall down.

1 [In den Ausgaben vor 1924 hieß es statt dessen falschli­serweise >Mobelwagen<.]

Hans: "Ja! Und auch beim Möbelwagen. Beim Möbelwagen nicht so oft."

Ich: "Du hast damals die Dummheit schon gehabt?"

Hans: "Nein, ich hab' sie erst gekriegt. Wie das Pferd vom Stell­wagen 1 umgefallen ist, hab' ich mich so sehr erschrocken, wirklich! Wie ich gegangen bin, hab' ich sie gekriegt."

Ich: "Die Dummheit war doch, daß du dir gedacht hast, ein Pferd wird dich beißen, und jetzt sagst du, du hast dich gefürchtet, daß ein Pferd umfallen wird."

Hans: "Umfallen und beißen wird."

Ich: "Weshalb bin du so erschrocken?"

Hans: "Weil das Pferd mit den Füssen so gemacht hat (legt sich auf die Erde hin und macht mir das Zappeln vor). Ich hab' mich ers­­schrocken, weil es einen Krawall gemacht hat mit den Füßen."

Ich: "Wo warst du damals mit der Mami?"

Hans: "Zuerst am Eislaufplatz, dann im Kaffeehause, dann eine Weste kaufen, dann beim Zuckerbäcker mit der Mami und dann nach Hause am Abend; da sind wir durch den Stadtpark durch­­gangen."

(Das alles wird von meiner Frau bestätigt, auch daß unmittelbar nachher die Angst ausgebrochen ist.)

Ich: "War das Pferd tot, wie es umgefallen ist?"

Hans: "Ja!"

Ich: "Woher weißt du das?"

Hans: "Weil ich's gesehen hab' (lacht). Nein, es war gar nicht tot."

Ich: "Vielleicht hast du dir gedacht, daß es tot ist."

Hans: "Nein, gewiß nicht. Ich hab's nur im Späße gesagt." (Seine Miene war aber damals ernst.)

Da er müde ist, lasse ich ihn laufen. Er erzählt mir nur noch, daß er

1 Hans hat recht, so unwahrscheinlich diese Vereinigung auch klingt. Der Zusammen­­hang ist nämlic:h, wie sich zeigen wird, daß das Pferd (der Vater) ihn beißen werde wegen seines Wunsches, daß es (der Vater) umfallen möge.
this that he had first been afraid of bus-horses, then of all others, and only in the end of furniture-van horses.

On the way back from Lainz there were a few more questions:

'I: “When the bus-horse fell down, what colour was it? White, red, brown, grey?”

Hans: “Black. Both horses were black.”

'I: “Was it big or little?”

Hans: “Big.”

'I: “Fat or thin?”

Hans: “Fat. Very big and fat.”

'I: “When the horse fell down, did you think of your daddy?”

Hans: “Perhaps. Yes. It’s possible.”'

His father’s investigations may have been without success at some points; but it does no harm to make acquaintance at close quarters with a phobia of this sort—which we may feel inclined to name after its new objects. [Cf. p. 125.] For in this way we get to see how diffuse it really is. It extends on to horses and on to carts, on to the fact that horses fall down and that they bite, on to horses of a particular character, on to carts that are heavily loaded. I will reveal at once that all these characteristics were derived from the circumstance that the anxiety originally had no reference at all to horses but was transposed on to them secondarily and had now become fixed upon those elements of the horse-complex which showed themselves well adapted for certain transferences.\footnote{1}{[Here ‘transference’ has a wider meaning than the one more usual in Freud’s later writings. It is used in the present sense in \textit{The Interpretation of Dreams} (1900a), Chapter VII, Section C (Standard Ed., 5, 562).]}

We must specially acknowledge one most important result of the boy’s examination by his father. We have learned the immediate precipitating cause after which the phobia broke out. This was when the boy saw a big heavy horse fall down;
and one at least of the interpretations of this impression seems to be that emphasized by his father, namely, that Hans at that moment perceived a wish that his father might fall down in the same way—and be dead. His serious expression as he was telling the story no doubt referred to this unconscious meaning. May there not have been yet another meaning concealed behind all this? And what can have been the significance of the making a row with its legs?

‘For some time Hans has been playing horses in the room; he trots about, falls down, kicks about with his feet, and neighs. Once he tied a small bag on like a nose-bag. He has repeatedly run up to me and bitten me.’

In this way he was accepting the last interpretations more decidedly than he could in words, but naturally with a change of parts, for the game was played in obedience to a wishful phantasy. Thus he was the horse, and bit his father, and in this way was identifying himself with his father.

‘I have noticed for the last two days that Hans has been defying me in the most decided manner, not impudently, but in the highest spirits. Is it because he is no longer afraid of me—the horse?’

‘April 6th. Went out with Hans in front of the house in the afternoon. At every horse that passed I asked him if he saw the “black on its mouth”; he said “no” every time. I asked him what the black really looked like; he said it was black iron. My first idea, that he meant the thick leather straps that are part of the harness of dray-horses, is therefore unconfirmed. I asked him if the “black” reminded him of a moustache, and he said: “Only by its colour.” So I do not yet know what it really is.

‘The fear has diminished; this time he ventured as far as the next-door house, but turned round quickly when he heard the sound of horses’ hooves in the distance. When a cart drew

Hans spielt seit einiger Zeit im Zimmer Pferd, rennt herum, fällt nieder, zappelt mit den Füssen, wiehert. Einmal bindet er sich ein Sackel wie einen Futtersack um. Wiederholt läuft er auf mich zu und beißt mich.

Er akzeptiert so die letzten Deutungen entschiedener, als er es mit Worten kann, natürlich aber mit Rolle vertauschung, da das Spiel im Dienste einer Wunschphantasie steht. Also er ist das Pferd, er beißt den Vater, übrigens identifiziert er sich dabei mit dem Vater.

Seit zwei Tagen bemerke ich, daß Hans sich in entschiedener Weise gegen mich auflehnt, nicht frech, sondern ganz lustig. Ist es, weil er sich vor mir, dem Pferde, nicht mehr fürchtet?


Die Furcht ist geringer; er wagt sich diesmal schon bis zum Nachbarhause, kehrt aber schnell um, wenn er in der Ferne Pferdetraben hört.
up at our door and came to a stop, he became frightened and ran into the house, because the horse began pawing with its foot. I asked him why he was afraid, and whether perhaps he was nervous because the horse had done like this (and I stamped with my foot). He said: "Don’t make such a row with your feet!” Compare his remark about the fallen bus-horse.

‘He was particularly terrified by a furniture-van passing by. At that he ran right inside the house. "Doesn’t a furniture-van look like that,” I asked him unconcernedly, "really look like a bus?" He said nothing. I repeated the question, and he then said: "Why, of course! Otherwise I shouldn’t be so afraid of a furniture-van."

‘April 7th. I asked again to-day what the “black on the horses’ mouths” looked like. Hans said: "Like a muzzle.” The curious thing is that for the last three days not a single horse has passed on which he could point out this “muzzle”. I myself have seen no such horse on any of my walks, although Hans asseverates that such horses do exist. I suspect that some sort of horses' bridle—the thick piece of harness round their mouths, perhaps—really reminded him of a moustache, and that after I alluded to this this fear disappeared as well.

‘Hans’s improvement is constant. The radius of his circle of activity with the street-door as its centre grows ever wider. He has even accomplished the feat, which has hitherto been impossible for him, of running across to the pavement opposite. All the fear that remains is connected with the bus scene, the meaning of which is not yet clear to me.

‘April 9th. This morning Hans came in to me while I was washing and bare to the waist.

‘Hans: “Daddy, you are lovely! You’re so white.”

‘I: "Yes. Like a white horse.”

Krankengeschichte und Analyse

Als ein Wagen bei unserem Haustore-vorfahrt und hält, gerät er in Angst und läuft ins Haus, da das Pferd mit dem Fuße scharrt. Ich frage ihn, weshalb er sich fürchte, ob er sich vielleicht ängstige, weil es so gemacht habe (stampfe mit dem Fuße auf). Er sagt: »Mach’ doch keinen solchen Krawall mit den Füßen!« Vergleiche dazu die Äußerung über das gefallene Stellwagenpferd.

Besonders schreckt ihn das Vortreiben eines Möbelwagens. Er läuft dann ins Hausinnerere. Ich frage ihn gleichgültig: »Sieht so ein Möbelwagen eigentlich nicht wie ein Stellwagen aus?« Er sagt nichts. Ich wiederhole die Frage. Er sagt dann: »Na natürlich, sonst würde ich mich nicht so vor einem Möbelwagen fürchten.«


Die Besserung Hansens ist konstant, der Radius seiner Aktionskreises mit dem Haustore als Zentrum größer; er unternimmt sogar das für ihn bisher unmögliche Kunststück, aufs Trottoir vis-à-vis hinüberzulaufen. Alle Furcht, die übrig ist, hängt mit der Stellwagenszene zusammen, deren Sinn mir allerdings noch nicht klar ist.


Hans: »Vatti, du bist aber schön, so weiß!«

Ich: »Nicht wahr, wie ein weißes Pferd.«
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

"Hans: "The only black thing's your moustache." (Continuing) "Or perhaps it's a black muzzle?"

'I told him then that I had been to see the Professor the evening before, and said: "There's one thing he wants to know." "I am curious," remarked Hans.

'I told him I knew on what occasions it was that he made a row with his feet. "Oh, yes!" he interrupted me, "when I'm cross, or when I have to do 'lump' and would rather play." (He has a habit, it is true, of making a row with his feet, i.e. of stamping, when he is angry.—"Doing lump" means doing number two. When Hans was small he said one day when he got off the chamber: "Look at the lump [German: 'Lumpf']."

He: "Nur der Schnurrbart ist schwarz (fortfahrend). Oder ist es vielleicht der schwarze Maulkorb?"

I erzähle ihm dann, daß ich am Abende vorher beim Professor war, und sage: "Der will einiges wissen," worauf Hans: "Da bin ich aber neugierig."

Ich erzähle ihm, ich weiß, bei welcher Gelegenheit er mit den Füßen Krawall macht. Er unterbricht mich: "Nicht wahr, wenn ich einen Lump habe oder wenn ich Lumpf machen soll und lieber spielen will." (Im Zorne hat er allerdings die Gewohnheit, mit den Füßen Krawall zu machen, d. h.: aufzustampfen. — »Lumpf machen« bedeutet auf die große Seite gehen. Als Hans klein war, sagte er eines Tages, vom Topfe aufstehend: »Schau den Lumpf«. [Er meinte: Strumpf wegen der Form und der Farbe.] 1 Diese Bezeichnung ist geblieben bis heute. — In ganz frühen Zeiten, wenn er auf den Topf gesetzt werden sollte und sich weigerte, das Spiel stehenzulassen, stempfte er wütend mit den Füßen auf, zappelte und warf sich eventuell auch auf den Boden.)

"And you kick about with your feet as well, when you have to widdle and don't want to go, because you'd rather go on playing."

He: "Oh, I must widdle." And he went out of the room—by way of confirmation, no doubt.

In the course of his visit his father had asked me what Hans could have been reminded of by the fallen horse kicking about with its feet. I had suggested that that may have been his own reaction when he retained his urine. Hans now confirmed this by means of the re-emergence during the conversation of a desire to micturate; and he added some other meanings of the making a row with the feet.

"We then went out in front of the street-door. When a coalcart came along, he said to me: "Daddy, I'm very much afraid of coal-carts, too."

'I: "Perhaps that's because they're as big as busses, too."

Hans: »Nur der Schnurrbart ist schwarz (fortfahrend). Oder ist es vielleicht der schwarze Maulkorb?«

Ich erzähle ihm dann, daß ich am Abende vorher beim Professor war, und sage: »Der will einiges wissen«, worauf Hans: »Da bin ich aber neugierig.«

Ich sage ihm, ich weiß, bei welcher Gelegenheit er mit den Füßen Krawall macht. Er unterbricht mich: »Nicht wahr, wenn ich einen Lump habe oder wenn ich Lumpf machen soll und lieber spielen will.« (Im Zorne hat er allerdings die Gewohnheit, mit den Füßen Krawall zu machen, d. h.: aufzustampfen. — »Lumpf machen« bedeutet auf die große Seite gehen. Als Hans klein war, sagte er eines Tages, vom Topfe aufstehend: »Schau den Lumpf«. [Er meinte: Strumpf wegen der Form und der Farbe.] 1 Diese Bezeichnung ist geblieben bis heute. — In ganz frühen Zeiten, wenn er auf den Topf gesetzt werden sollte und sich weigerte, das Spiel stehenzulassen, stempfte er wütend mit den Füßen auf, zappelte und warf sich eventuell auch auf den Boden.)

»Du zappelst auch mit den Füßen, wenn du Wiwi machen sollst und nicht gehen willst, weil du lieber spielen möchtest.«


Dann gehen wir vor Hausstor. Er sagt mir, als ein Kohlenwagen kommt: »Du, vor einem Kohlenwagen fürchte ich mich auch stark.«

Ich: »Vielleicht, weil er auch so groß ist wie ein Stellwagen.

1 [Hier handelt es sich nicht um eine Erläuterung der Herausgeber. Freud selbst hat hier edige Klammer benutzt, um die Parenthese innerhalb der Parenthese zu markieren.]
"Hans: "Yes; and because they’re so heavily loaded, and the horses have so much to drag and might easily fall down. If a cart’s empty, I’m not afraid." It is a fact, as I have already remarked, that only heavy vehicles throw him into a state of anxiety."

Nevertheless, the situation was decidedly obscure. The analysis was making little progress; and I am afraid the reader will soon begin to find this description of it tedious. Every analysis, however, has dark periods of this kind. But Hans was now on the point of leading us into an unexpected region.

"I came home and was speaking to my wife, who had made various purchases which she was showing me. Among them was a pair of yellow ladies' drawers. Hans exclaimed "Ugh!" two or three times, threw himself on the ground, and spat. My wife said he had done this two or three times already when he had seen the drawers.

"Why do you say ‘Ugh’?" I asked.
"Hans: “Because of the drawers.”
"I: “Why? Because of their colour? Because they’re yellow, and remind you of lump or widdle?"
"Hans: “Lumpf isn’t yellow. It’s white or black.”—Immediately afterwards: “I say, is it easy to do lumpf if you eat cheese?” (I had once told him so, when he asked me why I eat cheese.)
"I: “Yes.”
"Hans: “That’s why you go straight off every morning and do lumpf? I should so much like to eat cheese with my bread-and-butter.”

He had already asked me yesterday as he was jumping about in the street: “I say, it’s true, isn’t it, if you jump about a lot you can do lumpf easily?”—There has been trouble with his stools from the very first; and aperients and enemas have frequently been necessary. At one time his habitual..."
constipation was so great that my wife called in Dr. L. He was of opinion that Hans was overfed, which was in fact the case, and recommended a more moderate diet—and the condition was at once brought to an end. Recently the constipation has again made its appearance more frequently.

'After luncheon I said to him: "We'll write to the Professor again," and he dictated to me: "When I saw the yellow drawers I said 'Ugh! that makes me spit!' and threw myself down and shut my eyes and didn't look."

'I: "Why?"

'Hans: "Because I saw the yellow drawers; and I did the same sort of thing with the black drawers too. The black ones are the same sort of drawers, only they were black." (Interrupting himself) "I say, I am glad. I'm always so glad when I can write to the Professor."

'I: "Why did you say 'Ugh'? Were you disgusted?"

'Hans: "Yes, because I saw that. I thought I should have to lump."

'I: "Why?"

'Hans: "I don't know."

'I: "When did you see the black drawers?"

'Hans: "Once, when Anna (our maid) had been here a long time—with Mummy—she brought them home just after she'd bought them." (This statement was confirmed by my wife.)

'I: "Were you disgusted then, too?"

'Hans: "Yes."

'I: "Have you seen Mummy in drawers like that?"

'Hans: "No."

'I: "When she was dressing?"

'Hans: "When she bought the yellow ones I'd seen them once before already." (This is contradicted. He saw the yellow ones for the first time when his mother bought them.)

'For the last few weeks my wife has possessed a pair of black bloomers for wearing on cycling tours.'
"She’s got the black ones on to-day too" (correct), "because I saw her take them off in the morning."

'I: "What? She took off the black drawers in the morning?"

'Hans: "In the morning when she went out she took off the black drawers, and when she came back she put the black ones on again."

'I asked my wife about this, as it seemed to me absurd. She said it was entirely untrue. Of course she had not changed her drawers when she went out.

'I at once asked Hans about it: "You told me that Mummy had put on some black drawers, and that when she went out she took them off, and that when she came back she put them on again. But Mummy says it's not true."

'Hans: "I think perhaps I may have forgotten she didn't take them off." (Impatiently) "Oh, do let me alone."

I have a few comments to make at this point on the business of the drawers. It was obviously mere hypocrisy on Hans's part to pretend to be so glad of the opportunity of giving an account of the affair. In the end he threw the mask aside and was rude to his father. It was a question of things which had once afforded him a great deal of pleasure, but of which, now that repression had set in, he was very much ashamed, and at which he professed to be disgusted. He told some downright lies so as to disguise the circumstances in which he had seen his mother change her drawers. In reality, the putting on and taking off of her drawers belonged to the 'lumpf' context. His father was perfectly aware of what it was all about and of what Hans was trying to conceal.

'I asked my wife whether Hans was often with her when she went to the W.C. "Yes," she said, "often. He goes on pestering me till I let him. Children are all like that."

Nevertheless, it is worth bearing carefully in mind the desire, which Hans had already repressed, for seeing his mother doing lumpf.

s.v. X—2
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

'We went out in front of the house. He was in very good spirits and was prancing about all the time like a horse. So I said: "Now, who is it that's the bus-horse? Me, you or Mummy?"

'Hans (promptly): "I am; I'm a young horse."

'During the period when his anxiety was at its height, and he was frightened at seeing horses frisking, he asked me why they did it; and to reassure him I said: "Those are young horses, you see, and they frisk about like little boys. You frisk about too, and you're a little boy." Since then, whenever he has seen horses frisking, he has said: "That's right; those are young horses!"

'As we were going upstairs I asked him almost without thinking: "Used you to play at horses with the children at Gmunden?"

'He: "Yes." (Thoughtfully) "I think that was how I got the nonsense."

'I: "Who was the horse?"

'He: "I was; and Berta was the coachman."

'I: "Did you fall down by any chance, when you were a horse?"

'Hans: "No. When Berta said 'Gee-up', I ran ever so quick; I just raced along." ¹

'I: "You never played at buses?"

'Hans: "No. At ordinary carts, and horses without carts. When a horse has a cart, it can go without a cart just as well, and the cart can stay at home."

'I: "Used you often to play at horses?"

'Hans: "Very often. Fritz¹ was the horse once, too, and Franzl the coachman; and Fritzl ran ever so fast and all at once he hit his foot on a stone and bled."

'I: "Perhaps he fell down?"

¹ 'Hans had a set of toy harness with bells.'
² Another of the landlord's children, as we already know [see p. 16].
'Hans: "No. He put his foot in some water and then wrapped it up."'
'I: "Were you often the horse?"
'Hans: "Oh, yes."
'I: "And that was how you got the nonsense?"
'Hans: "Because they kept on saying "cos of the horse," "cos of the horse" (he put a stress on the "cos"); "so perhaps I got the nonsense because they talked like that; "cos of the horse.""

For a while Hans's father pursued his enquiry fruitlessly along other paths.
'I: "Did they tell you anything about horses?"
'Hans: "Yes."
'I: "What?"
'Hans: "I've forgotten."
'I: "Perhaps they told you about their widdlers?"
'Hans: "Oh, no."
'I: "Were you frightened of horses already then?"
'Hans: "Oh, no. I wasn't frightened at all."
'I: "Perhaps Berta told you that horses—"

See below [p. 82]. His father was quite right in suspecting that Fritzl fell down.

2 'Wegen dem Pferd.' I may explain that Hans was not maintaining that he had got the nonsense at that time but in that connection. Indeed, it must have been so, for theoretical considerations require that what is today the object of a phobia must at one time in the past have been the source of a high degree of pleasure. I may at the same time complete what the child was unable to express, and add that the little word 'wegen' ['because of,' 'cos of'] was the means of enabling the phobia to extend from horses on to 'Wagen' ['vehicles'] or, as Hans was accustomed to pronounce the word and hear it pronounced, 'Wagen' [pronounced exactly like 'wegen']. It must never be forgotten how much more concretely children treat words than grown-up people do, and consequently how much more significant for them are similarities of sound in words. This point was remarked upon by Freud in The Interpretation of Dreams (1900a), Chapter VI (near the end of Section A)—Standard Ed., 4, 303, as well as in Chapter IV of his book on Jokes (1905c).
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

Hans (interrupting): “—widdle? No.”

On April 10th I took up our conversation of the day before, and tried to discover what his “'cos of the horse” meant. Hans could not remember; he only knew that some children had stood outside the front door one morning and had said, “'cos of the horse, 'cos of the horse!” He had been there himself. When I pressed him more closely, he declared that they had not said “'cos of the horse” at all, but that he had remembered wrong.

“I: “But you and the others were often in the stables. You must surely have talked about horses there.”—“We didn’t.” —“What did you talk about?”—“Nothing.”—“Such a lot of children, and nothing to talk about?”—“We did talk about something, but not about horses.”—“Well, what was it?”—“I don’t remember any more.”

“I allowed the matter to drop, as the resistances were evidently too great,1 and went on to the following question: “Did you like playing with Berta?”

“Hans: “Yes, very much; but not with Olga. Do you know what Olga did? I was given a paper ball once by Grete up there at Gmunden, and Olga tore it all to pieces. Berta would never have torn my ball. I liked playing with Berta very much.”

“I: “Did you see what Berta’s widdler looked like?”

“Hans: “No, but I saw the horses’; because I was always in the stables, and so I saw the horses’ widdlers.”

“I: “And so you were curious and wanted to know what Berta’s and Mummy’s widdlers looked like?”

“Hans: “Yes.”

“I reminded him of how he had once complained to me

1 In point of fact there was nothing more to be got out of it than Hans’s verbal association, and this had escaped his father. Here is a good instance of conditions under which an analyst’s efforts are wasted.
that the little girls always wanted to look on while he was widdling [p. 21].

'He: "Berta always looked on at me too" (he spoke with great satisfaction and not at all resentfully); "often she did. I used to widdle in the little garden where the radishes were, and she stood outside the front door and looked on at me."

'I: "And when she widdled, did you look on?"

'He: "She used to go to the W.C."

'I: "And you were curious?"

'He: "I was inside the W.C. when she was in it."

(This was a fact. The servants told us about it once, and I recollect that we forbade Hans to do it.)

'I: "Did you tell her you wanted to go in?"

'He: "I went in alone and because Berta let me. There's nothing shameful in that."

'I: "And you'd have liked to see her widdler?"

'He: "Yes, but I didn't see it."

'I then reminded him of the dream about playing forfeits that he had had at Gmunden [p. 20], and said: "When you were at Gmunden did you want Berta to make you widdle?"

'He: "I never said so to her."

'I: "Why didn't you ever say so to her?"

'He: "Because I didn't think of it." (Interrupting himself)

"If I write everything to the Professor, my nonsense'll soon be over, won't it?"

'I: "Why did you want Berta to make you widdle?"

'He: "I don't know. Because she looked on at me."

'I: "Did you think to yourself she should put her hand to your widdler?"

'He: "Yes." (Changing the subject) "It was such fun at Gmunden. In the little garden where the radishes were there was a little sand-heap; I used to play there with my spade."

'(This was the garden where he used always to widdle.)

'I: "Did you put your hand to your widdler at Gmunden, when you were in bed?"
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

'He: "No. Not then; I slept so well at Gmunden that I never thought of it at all. The only times I did it was at — Street 1 and now."
'I: "But Berta never put her hand to your widdler?"
'He: "She never did, no; because I never told her to."
'I: "Well, and when was it you wanted her to?"
'He: "Oh, at Gmunden once."
'I: "Only once?"
'He: "Well, now and then."
'I: "She used always to look on at you when you widdled; perhaps she was curious to know how you did it?"
'He: "Perhaps she was curious to know what my widdler looked like."
'I: "But you were curious too. Only about Berta?"
'He: "About Berta, and about Olga."
'I: "About who else?"
'He: "About no one else."
'I: "You know that's not true. About Mummy too."
'He: "Oh, yes, about Mummy."
'I: "But now you're not curious any more. You know what Hanna's widdler looks like, don't you?"
'He: "I'll grow, though, won't it?"
'I: "Yes, of course. But when it's grown it won't look like yours."
'He: "I know that. It'll be the same" (sc. as it now is) "only bigger."
'I: "When we were at Gmunden, were you curious when your Mummy undressed?"
'He: "Yes. And then when Hanna was in her bath I saw her widdler."
'I: "And Mummy's too?"
'He: "No."
'I: "You were disgusted when you saw Mummy's drawers?"

1 The flat they were in before the move [p. 15].
2 Hans wants to be assured that his own widdler will grow.

Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

Er: »Nein, noch nicht. In Gmunden hab' ich so gut geschlafen, daß ich gar nicht daran gedacht hab'. Nur in der — gasse 1 und jetzt hab ich's getan.«
Ich: »Die Berta hat aber nie die Hand zu deinem Wiwimacher gegeben?«
Er: »Sie hat es nie getan, nein, weil ich's nie gesagt hab'.«
Ich: »Wann hast du dir's denn gewünscht?«
Er: »Einen Tag halt in Gmunden.«
Ich: »Nur einmal?«
Er: »Ja, öfters.«
Ich: »Immer wenn du Wiwi gemacht hast, hat sie hergeschaut; sie war vielleicht neugierig, wie du Wiwi machen tust.«
Er: »Vielleicht war sie neugierig, wie mein Wiwimacher aussieht.«
Ich: »Du warst aber auch neugierig; nur auf die Berta?«
Er: »Auf die Berta, auf die Olga.«
Ich: »Auf wen noch?«
Er: »Auf niemand andern.«
Ich: »Das ist ja nicht wahr. Auf die Mammi auch.«
Er: »Auf die Mammi schon.«
Ich: »Jetzt bist du doch nicht mehr neugierig. Du weißt doch, wie der Wiwimacher der Hanna ausschaut?«
Er: »Er wird aber wachsen, nicht?«
Ich: »Ja gewiß, aber wann er wächst, wird er nicht ausschaun wie deiner.«
Er: »Das weiß ich. Er wird so sein« (sc. wie er jetzt ist), »nur größer.«

1 In der früheren Wohnung vor dem Umzuge [S. 21].
2 Er will die Sicherheit haben, daß sein eigener Wiwimacher wachsen wird.

57
Our young man was here wrestling with a subject of which he was not equal to giving a clear exposition; so that there is some difficulty in understanding him. He may perhaps have meant that the drawers only recalled his feelings of disgust when he saw them on their own account; as soon as his mother had them on, he ceased to connect them with lump or widdle, and they then interested him in a different way.
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

Er: "Perhaps it's because it makes a row when you pull the plug."
Ich: "And then you're afraid."
Er: "Yes."
Ich: "And what about our W.C. here?"
Er: "Here I'm not. At Lainz it gives me a fright when you pull the plug. And when I'm inside and the water rushes down, then it gives me a fright too."

And, "just to show me that he wasn't frightened in our flat," he made me go into the W.C. and set the flush in motion. He then explained to me:

"First there's a loud row, and then a loose one." (This is when the water comes down.) "When there's a loud row I'd rather stay inside, and when there's a soft one I'd rather go out."

Ich: "Because you're afraid?"
Er: "Because if there's a loud row I always so much like to see it"—(correcting himself)—"to hear it; so I'd rather stay inside and hear it properly."

Ich: "What does a loud row remind you of?"
Er: "That I've got to do lump in the W.C." (The same thing, that is, that the black drawers reminded him of.)

Ich: "Why?"
Er: "I don't know. A loud row sounds as though you were doing lump. A big row reminds me of lump, and a little one of widdle." (Cf. the black and the yellow drawers.)

Ich: "I say, wasn't the bus-horse the same colour as a lump?"
Er (very much struck): "Yes."

At this point I must put in a few words. Hans's father was asking too many questions, and was pressing the inquiry along his own lines instead of allowing the little boy to express his thoughts. For this reason the analysis began to be obscure and uncertain. Hans went his own way and would produce nothing if attempts were made to draw him off it.
For the moment his interest was evidently centred upon lump
and widdle, but we cannot tell why. Just as little satisfactory
light was thrown upon the business of the row as upon that
of the yellow and black drawers. I suspect that the boy’s
sharp ears had clearly detected the difference between the
sounds made by a man micturating and a woman. The
analysis succeeded in forcing the material somewhat artifici­
ally into an expression of the distinction between the two
different calls of nature. I can only advise those of my readers
who have not as yet themselves conducted an analysis not to
try to understand everything at once, but to give a kind of
unbiased attention to every point that arises and to await
further developments.

‘April 11th. This morning Hans came into our room again
and was sent away, as he always has been for the last few
days.

‘Later on, he began: “Daddy, I thought something: I was
in the bath, and then the plumber came and unscrewed it. Then he
took a big borer and stuck it into my stomach.”’

Hans’s father translated this phantasy as follows: ‘“I was
in bed with Mummy. Then Daddy came and drove me
away. With his big penis he pushed me out of my place by
Mummy.”’

Let us suspend our judgement for the present.

‘He went on to relate a second idea that he had had: “We
were travelling in the train to Gmunden. In the station we
put on our clothes; but we couldn’t get it done in time, and
the train carried us on.”

‘Later on, I asked: “Have you ever seen a horse doing
lump?”

‘Hans: “Yes, very often.”

‘I: “Does it make a loud row when it does lump?”

1 ‘Hans’s mother gives him his bath.’
2 ‘To take it away to be repaired.’

1 Hans wird von der Mama gebadet. [Anmerkung des Vaters.]
2 Um sie in Reparatur zu nehmen. [Anmerkung des Vaters.]
'Hans: “Yes.”
'I: “What does the row remind you of?”
'Hans: “Like when lump falls into the chamber.”
'The bus-horse that falls down and makes a row with its feet is no doubt—a lump falling and making a noise. His fear of defaecation and his fear of heavily loaded carts is equivalent to the fear of a heavily loaded stomach.'

Hans was now beginning to bring fuel to the analysis in the shape of spontaneous utterances of his own. This remark of his established the connection between his two last phantasies—that of the plumber who unscrewed the bath and that of the unsuccessful journey to Gmunden. His father had correctly inferred from the latter that Hans had some aversion to Gmunden. This, by the way, is another good reminder of the fact that what emerges from the unconscious is to be understood in the light not of what goes before but of what comes after.

'Hans: “Because of falling in.”
'I: “But why were you never afraid when you had your bath in the little bath?”
'Hans: “Why, I sat in that one. I couldn’t lie down in it, it was too small.”

April 11th. At luncheon Hans said: “If only we had a bath at Gmunden, so that I didn’t have to go to the public baths!” It is a fact that at Gmunden he was always taken to the neighbouring public baths to be given a hot bath—a proceeding against which he used to protest with passionate tears. And in Vienna, too, he always screams if he is made to sit or lie in the big bath. He must be given his bath kneeling or standing.'


'I asked him whether he was afraid, and if so of what.
'Hans: “Because of falling in.”
'I: “But why were you never afraid when you had your bath in the little bath?”
'Hans: “Why, I sat in that one. I couldn’t lie down in it, it was too small.”
'I: "When you went in a boat at Gmunden weren't you afraid of falling into the water?"
'Hans: "No, because I held on, so I couldn't fall in. It's only in the big bath that I'm afraid of falling in."
'I: "But Mummy baths you in it. Are you afraid of Mummy dropping you in the water?"
'Hans: "I'm afraid of her letting go and my head going in."
'I: "But you know Mummy's fond of you and won't let go of you."
'Hans: "I only just thought it."
'I: "Why?"
'Hans: "I don't know at all."
'I: "Perhaps it was because you'd been naughty and thought she didn't love you any more?"
'Hans: "Yes."
'I: "When you were watching Mummy giving Hanna her bath, perhaps you wished she would let go of her so that Hanna should fall in?"
'Hans: "Yes."

Hans’s father, we cannot help thinking, had made a very good guess.

'April 12th. As we were coming back from Lainz in a second-class carriage, Hans looked at the black leather upholstery of the seats, and said: "Ugh! that makes me spit! Black drawers and black horses make me spit too, because I have to do lumps."
'I: "Perhaps you saw something of Mummy's that was black, and it frightened you?"
'Hans: "Yes."
'I: "Well, what was it?"
'Hans: "I don't know. A black blouse or black stockings."
'I: "Perhaps it was black hair near her widdler, when you were curious and looked."
'Hans (defending himself): "But I didn't see her widdler."

Ich: »Wenn du in Gmunden Schinakel gefahren bist, hast du dich nicht gefürchtet, daß du ins Wasser fällst?«
Ich: »Da badet dich doch die Mama. Fürchtest du dich, daß dich die Mammis Wasser werfen wird?«
Hans: »Daß sie die Hände wegeben wird und ich falle ins Wasser mit dem Kopf.«
Ich: »Du weißt doch, die Mammis hat dich lieb, sie wird doch nicht die Hände wegeben.«
Hans: »Ich hab’s halt geglaubt.«
Ich: »Warum?«
Hans: »Das weiß ich bestimmt nicht.«
Ich: »Vielleicht weil du schlimm warst und du geglaubt hast, daß sie dich nicht mehr gerne hat?«
Hans: »Ja!«
Ich: »Wenn du dabei warst, wie die Mammis die Hanna gebadet hat, hast du vielleicht gewünscht, sie soll die Hand loslassen, damit die Hanna hineinfällt?«
Hans: »Ja.«
Wir glauben, dies hat der Vater sehr richtig erraten.

Ich: »Hast du vielleicht bei der Mammis etwas Schwarzes gesehen, was dich erschreckt hat?«

Hans: »Ja!«
Ich: »Was denn?«
Hans: »Ich weiß nicht. Eine schwarze Bluse oder schwarze Strümpfe.«
Ich: »Vielleicht beim Wiwimacher schwarze Haare, wenn du neugierig warst und hingeschaut hast.«
Hans (entschuldigend): »Aber den Wiwimacher hab’ ich nicht gesehen.«
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

'Another time, he was frightened once more at a cart driving out of the yard gates opposite. "Don't the gates look like a behind?" I asked.

'He: "And the horses are the lumfs!" Since then, whenever he sees a cart driving out, he says: "Look, there's a 'lumfy' coming!" This form of the word ("lumfy") is quite a new one to him; it sound like a term of endearment. My sister-in-law always calls her child "Wumfy".

'On April 13th he saw a piece of liver in the soup and exclaimed: "Ugh! A lumf!" Meat croquettes, too, he eats with evident reluctance, because their form and colour remind him of lump.

'In the evening my wife told me that Hans had been out on the balcony and had said: "I thought to myself Hanna was on the balcony and fell down off it." I had once or twice told him to be careful that Hanna did not get too near the balustrade when she was out on the balcony; for the railing was designed in the most unpractical way (by a metal-worker of the Secessionist movement) and had big gaps in it which I had to have filled in with wire netting. Hans's repressed wish was very transparent. His mother asked him if he would rather Hanna were not there, to which he said "Yes".

'April 14th. The theme of Hanna is uppermost. As you may remember from earlier records, Hans felt a strong aversion to the new-born baby that robbed him of a part of his parents' love. This dislike has not entirely disappeared and is only partly overcompensated by an exaggerated affection.1 He has already several times expressed a wish that the stork should bring no more babies and that we should pay him money not to bring any more "out of the big box" where

1 The 'Hanna' theme immediately succeeded the 'lumf' theme, and the explanation of this at length begins to dawn upon us: Hanna was a lumf herself—babies were lumfs.

Analysis der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

Als er sich wieder einmal fürchtete, wie aus dem Hoftor vis-à-vis ein Wagen fuhr, fragte ich: "Sieht dieses Tor nicht aus wie ein Podl?" Er: "Und die Pferde sind die Lumpfes!" Seitdem sagt er immer, wenn er einen Wagen herausfahren sieht: "Schau, ein Lumpf kommt." Die Form Lumpf ist ihm sonst ganz fremd, sie klingt wie ein Kosewort. Meine Schwägerin heißt ihr Kind immer "Wumpfi".

Am 13. April sieht er in der Suppe ein Stück Leber und sagt: "Pfui, ein Lumpf." Auch faschiertes Fleisch ist er sichtlich ungnern wegen der Form und Farbe, die ihn an einen Lumpf erinnern.

Abends erzählt meine Frau, Hans sei auf dem Balkon gewesen und habe dann gesagt: "Ich hab' gedacht, die Hanna ist am Balkon gewesen und ist hinuntergefallen." Ich hatte ihm öfter gesagt, er soll, wenn die Hanna auf dem Balkon ist, achtgeben, daß sie nicht zu nahe ans Geländer kommt, das von einem sezessionistischen Schlosser höchst ungeschickt — mit großen Öffnungen, die ich erst mit einem Drahtnetz verkleinern lassen mußte — konstruiert worden ist. Der verdrängte Wunsch Hansens ist sehr durchsichtig. Die Mama fragt ihn, ob es ihm lieber wäre, wenn die Hanna nicht da wäre, was er bejaht.

14. April. Das Thema Hanna steht im Vordergrund. Er hatte, wie aus früheren Aufzeichnungen erinnerlich, gegen das neugeborene Kind, das ihm einen Teil der Liebe der Eltern raubte, eine große Aversion, die auch jetzt noch nicht ganz geschwunden und durch übergroße Zärtlichkeit nur zum Teil überkompensiert ist. Er äußerte sich öfter schon, der Storch solle kein Kind mehr bringen, wir sollen ihm Geld geben, daß er keines mehr aus der großen Kiste,

1 Wenn das Thema "Hanna" das Thema "Lumpf" direkt abloßt, so leuchten uns der Grund dafür endlich ein. Die Hanna ist selbst ein "Lumpf", Kinder sind Lumpfes.
babies are. (Compare his fear of furniture-vans. Does not a
bus look like a big box?) Hanna screams such a lot, he says,
and that's a nuisance to him.

‘Once he suddenly said: “Can you remember when
Hanna came? She lay beside Mummy in bed, so nice and
good.” (His praise rang suspiciously hollow.)

‘And then as regards downstairs, outside the house. There
is again great progress to be reported. Even drays cause him
less alarm. Once he called out, almost with joy: “Here comes
a horse with something black on its mouth!” And I was at
last able to establish the fact that it was a horse with a
leather muzzle. But Hans was not in the least afraid of this
horse.

‘Once he knocked on the pavement with his stick and said:
“I say, is there a man underneath?—some one buried?—or
is that only in the cemetery?” So he is occupied not only
with the riddle of life but with the riddle of death.

‘When we got indoors again I saw a box standing in the
front hall, and Hans said: “Hanna travelled with us to
Gmunden in a box like that. Whenever we travelled to
Gmunden she travelled with us in the box. You don’t
believe me again? Really, Daddy. Do believe me. We got a
big box and it was full of babies; they sat in the bath.” (A
small bath had been packed inside the box.) “I put them in
it. Really and truly. I can remember quite well.”

‘I: “What can you remember?”

‘Hans: “That Hanna travelled in the box; because I
haven’t forgotten about it. My word of honour!”

‘I: “But last year Hanna travelled with us in the railway
carriage.”

‘Hans: “But before that she always travelled with us in the box.”

1 Hans was now going off into a phantasy. As we can see, a box and
a bath have the same meaning for him: they both represent the space
which contains the babies. We must bear in mind Hans’s repeated
assurances on this point.

Krankengeschichte und Analyse

worin die Kinder sind, bringe. (Vgl. die Furcht vor dem Möbel-
swagen. Sieht nicht ein Stellwagen wie eine große Kiste aus?) Die
Hanna machte soviel Geschrei, das sei ihm lästig.

Einmal sagt er plötzlich: »Kannst du dich erinnern, wie die Hanna
gekommen ist? Sie ist bei der Mamm im Bette gelegen, so lieb und
brav.« (Dieses Lob hat verdächtig falsch geklungen!) Dann
unten vor dem Hause. Es ist abermals ein großer Fortschritt zu
bemerken. Selbst Lastwagen flößen ihm geringere Furcht ein. Einmal
ruft er fast freudig: »Da kommt ein Pferd mit was Schwarzen am
Munde«, und ich kann endlich konstatieren, daß es ein Pferd mit
einem Maulkorbe aus Leder ist. Hans hat aber gar keine Angst vor
diesem Pferde.

Einst schlägt er mit seinem Stock auf das Pflaster und fragt: »Du,
ist da ein Mann unten ... einer, der begraben ist ..., oder gibt’s das
nur am Friedhofe?« Ihm beschäftigt also nicht nur das Rätsel des
Lebens, sondern auch das des Todes.

Zurückgekehrt sehe ich eine Kiste im Vorzimmer stehen und Hans
sagt: »Hanna ist in so einer Kiste nach Gmunden mitgefahren. Im-
mer wenn wir nach Gmunden gefahren sind, ist sie mitgefahren in der
mir. Wir haben eine große Kiste gekriegt und da sind lauter Kinder
drin, in der Badewanne sitzen sie drin. (In der Kiste ist eine kleine
Badewanne eingepackt worden.) Ich hab’ sie hineingesetzt, wirklich.
Ich kann mich gut erinnern.«

Ich: »Was kannst du dich erinnern?«

Hans: »Daß die Hanna in der Kiste gefahren ist, weil ich’s nicht ver-
gessen hab’. Mein Ehrenwort!«

Ich: »Aber voriges Jahr ist doch die Hanna im Coupé mitgefahren.«

Hans: »Aber immer früher ist sie in der Kiste mitgefahren.«

1 Er beginnt nun zu phantasieren. Wir erfahren, daß Kiste und Badewanne ihm das
gleiche bedeuten, Vertretungen des Raumes, in dem sich die Kinder befinden. Beachten
wir seine wiederholten Beteuerungen!
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

'I: "Didn't Mummy have the box?"
'Hans: "Yes. Mummy had it."
'I: "Where?"
'Hans: "At home in the attic."
'I: "Perhaps she carried it about with her?"
'Hans: "No. And when we travel to Gmunden this time Hanna'll travel in the box again."
'I: "And how did she get out of the box, then?"
'Hans: "She was taken out."
'I: "By Mummy?"
'Hans: "Mummy and me. Then we got into the carriage, and Hanna rode on the horse, and the coachman said 'Gee-up'. The coachman sat up in front. Were you there too? Mummy knows all about it. Mummy doesn't know; she's forgotten about it already, but don't tell her anything!"
'I made him repeat the whole of this.
'Hans: "Then Hanna got out."
'I: "Why, she couldn't walk at all then."
'Hans: "Well then, we lifted her down."
'I: "But how could she have sat on the horse? She couldn't sit up at all last year."
'Hans: "Oh yes, she sat up all right, and called out 'Gee-up', and whipped with her whip—'Gee-up! Gee-up!'—the whip I used to have. The horse hadn't any stirrups, but Hanna rode it. I'm not joking, you know, Daddy."

What can be the meaning of the boy's obstinate persistence in all this nonsense? Oh no, it was no nonsense: it was parody, it was Hans's revenge upon his father. It was as much as to say: 'If you really expect me to believe that the stork brought Hanna in October, when even in the summer, while we were travelling to Gmunden, I'd noticed how big Mother's stomach was,—then I expect...

1 The box was of course the womb. (Hans's father was trying to let him know that he understood this.) And the same is true of the caskets in which so many of the heroes of mythology were exposed, from the time of King Sargon of Agade onwards.—(Addad 1923;)

Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

Ich: 'Hat die Mamm nicht die Kiste gehabt?«
Hans: »Ja, die Mamm hat sie gehabt!«
Ich: »Wo denn?«
Hans: »Zu Hause am Boden.«
Ich: »Hat sie sie vielleicht mit sich herumgetragen?«
Hans: »Nein! Wenn wir jetzt nach Gmunden fahren, wird die Hanna auch in der Kiste fahren.«
Ich: »Wie ist sie denn aus der Kiste herausgekommen?«
Hans: »Man hat sie herausgenommen.«
Ich: »Die Mamm?«

Ich lasse mir alles wiederholen.
Hans: »Dann ist die Hanna ausgestiegen.«
Ich: »Sie hat noch gar nicht gehen können.«
Hans: »Wir haben sie dann heruntergehoben.«
Ich: »Wie hat sie denn am Pferde sitzen können, sie hat ja voriges Jahr noch gar nicht sitzen können.«
Hans: »O ja, sie hat schon gesessen und hat gerufen 'Huu!', und gepeitscht 'Huu', 'Huu' mit der Peitsche, die ich früher gehabt hab.«
Das Pferd hat gar keinen Steigbügel gehabt und die Hanna hat geritten; Vatti, aber nicht im Späße vielleicht.«

Was soll dieser hartnäckig festgehaltene Unsinn? Oh, es ist kein Unsinn, es ist Parodie und Hansens Rache an seinem Vater. Es heißt soviel als: KANNST DU MIR ZUMUTEN, DASS IB GLAUBEN SOLL, DER STORCH HABE DIE HANNA IM OKTOBER GEbracht, WO IDOCH DEN GROßen LEIB DER Mutter schon im Sommer, WIE WIR NACH GMUNDEN GEfahren sind, bemerkt hab, so kann ich verlangen, dass...

you to believe my lies.' What can be the meaning of the assertion that even the summer before the last Hanna had travelled with them to Gmunden 'in the box', except that he knew about his mother's pregnancy? His holding out the prospect of a repetition of this journey in the box in each successive year exemplifies a common way in which unconscious thoughts from the past emerge into consciousness; or it may have special reasons and express his dread of seeing a similar pregnancy repeated on their next summer holiday. We now see, moreover, what the circumstances were that had made him take a dislike to the journey to Gmunden, as his second phantasy had indicated [p. 65].

'Later on, I asked him how Hanna had actually come into his mother's bed after she was born.'

This gave Hans a chance of letting himself go and fairly 'stuffing' his father.

'Hans: 'Hanna just came. Frau Kraus' (the midwife) "put her in the bed. She couldn't walk, of course. But the stork carried her in his beak. Of course she couldn't walk." (He went on without a pause.) "The stork came up the stairs up to the landing, and then he knocked and everybody was asleep, and he had the right key and unlocked the door and put Hanna in your bed, and Mummy was asleep—no, the stork put her in her bed. It was the middle of the night, and then the stork put her in the bed very quietly, he didn't trample about at all, and then he took his hat and went away again. No, he hadn't got a hat."

'I: "Who took his hat? The doctor, perhaps?"

'Hans: "Then the stork went away; he went home, and then he rang at the door, and every one in the house stopped sleeping. But don't tell this to Mummy or Tini" (the cook). "It's a secret."

'I: "Are you fond of Hanna?"

1 Ironical, of course. Like his subsequent request that none of the secret should be betrayed to his mother.
72 A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

"Hans: "Oh yes, very fond."
'I: "Would you rather that Hanna weren't alive or that she were?"
'Hans: "I'd rather she weren't alive."
'I: "Why?"
'Hans: "At any rate she wouldn't scream so, and I can't bear her screaming."
'I: "Why, you scream yourself."
'Hans: "But Hanna screams too."
'I: "Why can’t you bear it?"
'Hans: "Because she screams so loud."
'I: "Why, she doesn't scream at all."
'Hans: "When she's whacked on her bare bottom, then she screams."
'I: "Have you ever whacked her?"
'Hans: "When Mummy whacks her on her bottom, then she screams."
'I: "And you don’t like that?"
'Hans: "No. . . . Why? Because she makes such a row with her screaming."
'I: "If you’d rather she weren’t alive, you can’t be fond of her at all."
'Hans (assenting): "H’m, well."
'I: "That was why you thought when Mummy was giving her her bath, if only she'd let go, Hanna would fall into the water . . . ."
'Hans (taking me up): "... and die."
'I: "And then you’d be alone with Mummy. A good boy doesn’t wish that sort of thing, though."
'Hans: "But he may think it."
'I: "But that isn’t good."
'Hans: "If he thinks it, it is good all the same, because you can write it to the Professor." 1

1 Well done, little Hans! I could wish for no better understanding of psycho-analysis from any grown-up.

---

Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

Hans: "O ja, sehr gerne."
Ich: "Wäre es dir lieber, wenn die Hanna nicht auf die Welt gekommen wäre, oder ist es dir lieber, daß sie auf der Welt ist?"
Hans: "Mir wär’ lieber, daß sie nicht auf die Welt gekommen wär’."
Ich: "Warum?"
Hans: "Wennstens schreit sie nicht so und ich kann das Schreien nicht aushalten."
Ich: "Du schreist ja selbst."
Hans: "Die Hanna schreit ja auch."
Ich: "Warum kannst du es nicht aushalten?"
Hans: "Weil sie so stark schreit."
Ich: "Aber sie schreit ja gar nicht."

Hans: "Wenn man sie am nackten Popo haut, dann schreit sie."

Ich: "Hast du sie einmal gehaut?"
Hans: "Wenn die Mammi sie auf den Popo haut, dann schreit sie."
Ich: "Das hast du nicht gerne?"
Hans: "Nein ... Warum? Weil sie so einen Krawall macht mit dem Schreien."

Ich: "Wenn du lieber hättest, daß sie nicht auf der Welt wär’, hast du sie ja gar nicht gern."
Hans: "Hm, hm" (zustimmend).

Ich: "Deshalb hast du gedacht, wenn die Mammi sie bädet, wenn sie die Hände weggeben möcht’, dann möchte sie ins Wasser fallen . . . ."
Hans (ergänzt): - »und sterben."
Ich: "Und du würst dann allein mit der Mammi. Und ein braver Bub’ wünscht das doch nicht."
Hans: "Aber denken darf er’s."
Ich: "Das ist aber nicht gut."

Hans: «Wenn er’s denken tut, ist es doch gut, damit man’s dem Professor schreibt.»

1 Wacker, kleiner Hans! Ich wünschte mir bei keinem Erwachsenen ein besseres Verständnis der Psychoanalyse.
Later on I said to him: "You know, when Hanna gets bigger and can talk, you'll be fonder of her."

Hans: "Oh no. I am fond of her. In the autumn, when she's big, I shall go with her to the Stadtpark quite alone, and explain everything to her."

As I was beginning to give him some further enlightenment, he interrupted me, probably with the intention of explaining to me that it was not so wicked of him to wish that Hanna was dead.

Hans: "You know, all the same, she'd been alive a long time even before she was here. When she was with the stork she was alive too."

I: "No. Perhaps she wasn't with the stork after all."

Hans: "Who brought her, then? The stork had got her."

I: "Where did he bring her from, then?"

Hans: "Oh—from him."

I: "Where had he got her, then?"

Hans: "In the box; in the stork-box."

I: "Well, and what does the box look like?"

Hans: "Red. Painted red. (Blood?)"

I: "Who told you that?"

Hans: "Mummy... I thought it to myself... it's in the book."

I: "In what book?"

Hans: "In the picture-book." (I made him fetch his first picture-book. In it was a picture of a stork's nest with storks, on a red chimney. This was the box. Curiously enough, on the same page there was also a picture of a horse being shod.1 Hans had transferred the babies into the box, as they were not to be seen in the nest.)

I: "And what did the stork do with her?"

Hans: "Then the stork brought Hanna here. In his beak.

1 [In view of what follows presently it may be worth remarking that the German word for 'shod' ('beschlagen') differs in only a single letter from that for 'beaten' ('geschlagen').]
You know, the stork that's at Schönbrunn, and that bit the umbrella.” (A reminiscence of an episode at Schönbrunn.)

I: “Did you see how the stork brought Hanna?”

Hans: “Why, I was still asleep, you know. A stork can never bring a little girl or a little boy in the morning.”

I: “Why?”

Hans: “He can’t. A stork can’t do it. Do you know why? So that people shan’t see. And then, all at once, in the morning, there’s a little girl there.”

I: “But, all the same, you were curious at the time to know how the stork did it?”

Hans: “Oh yes.”

I: “What did Hanna look like when she came?”

Hans (hypocritically): “All white and lovely. So pretty.”

I: “But when you saw her the first time you didn’t like her.”

Hans: “Oh, I did; very much!”

I: “You were surprised that she was so small, though.”

Hans: “Yes.”

I: “How small was she?”

Hans: “Like a baby stork.”

I: “Like what else? Like a lumpf, perhaps?”

Hans: “Oh no. A lumpf’s much bigger... a bit smaller than Hanna, really.”

I had predicted to his father that it would be possible to trace back Hans’s phobia to thoughts and wishes occasioned by the birth of his baby sister. But I had omitted to point out that according to the sexual theory of children a baby is a ‘lumpf’, so that Hans’s path would lie through the excre-

1 There is no need to find fault with Hans’s inconsistencies. In the previous conversation his disbelief in the stork had emerged from his unconscious and had been coupled with the exasperation he felt against his father for making so many mysteries. But he had now become calmer and was answering his father’s questions with official thoughts in which he had worked out glosses upon the many difficulties involved in the stork hypothesis.

I had predicted to his father that it would be possible to trace back Hans’s phobia to thoughts and wishes occasioned by the birth of his baby sister. But I had omitted to point out that according to the sexual theory of children a baby is a ‘lumpf’, so that Hans’s path would lie through the excre-

1 There is no need to find fault with Hans’s inconsistencies. In the previous conversation his disbelief in the stork had emerged from his unconscious and had been coupled with the exasperation he felt against his father for making so many mysteries. But he had now become calmer and was answering his father’s questions with official thoughts in which he had worked out glosses upon the many difficulties involved in the stork hypothesis.

I had predicted to his father that it would be possible to trace back Hans’s phobia to thoughts and wishes occasioned by the birth of his baby sister. But I had omitted to point out that according to the sexual theory of children a baby is a ‘lumpf’, so that Hans’s path would lie through the excre-

1 There is no need to find fault with Hans’s inconsistencies. In the previous conversation his disbelief in the stork had emerged from his unconscious and had been coupled with the exasperation he felt against his father for making so many mysteries. But he had now become calmer and was answering his father’s questions with official thoughts in which he had worked out glosses upon the many difficulties involved in the stork hypothesis.

I had predicted to his father that it would be possible to trace back Hans’s phobia to thoughts and wishes occasioned by the birth of his baby sister. But I had omitted to point out that according to the sexual theory of children a baby is a ‘lumpf’, so that Hans’s path would lie through the excre-

1 There is no need to find fault with Hans’s inconsistencies. In the previous conversation his disbelief in the stork had emerged from his unconscious and had been coupled with the exasperation he felt against his father for making so many mysteries. But he had now become calmer and was answering his father’s questions with official thoughts in which he had worked out glosses upon the many difficulties involved in the stork hypothesis.

I had predicted to his father that it would be possible to trace back Hans’s phobia to thoughts and wishes occasioned by the birth of his baby sister. But I had omitted to point out that according to the sexual theory of children a baby is a ‘lumpf’, so that Hans’s path would lie through the excre-

1 There is no need to find fault with Hans’s inconsistencies. In the previous conversation his disbelief in the stork had emerged from his unconscious and had been coupled with the exasperation he felt against his father for making so many mysteries. But he had now become calmer and was answering his father’s questions with official thoughts in which he had worked out glosses upon the many difficulties involved in the stork hypothesis.

I had predicted to his father that it would be possible to trace back Hans’s phobia to thoughts and wishes occasioned by the birth of his baby sister. But I had omitted to point out that according to the sexual theory of children a baby is a ‘lumpf’, so that Hans’s path would lie through the excre-

1 There is no need to find fault with Hans’s inconsistencies. In the previous conversation his disbelief in the stork had emerged from his unconscious and had been coupled with the exasperation he felt against his father for making so many mysteries. But he had now become calmer and was answering his father’s questions with official thoughts in which he had worked out glosses upon the many difficulties involved in the stork hypothesis.
mental complex. It was owing to this neglect on my part that the progress of the case became temporarily obscured. Now that the matter had been cleared up, Hans's father attempted to examine the boy a second time upon this important point.

The next day, I got Hans to repeat what he had told me yesterday. He said: "Hanna travelled to Gmunden in the big box, and Mummy travelled in the railway carriage, and Hanna travelled in the luggage train with the box; and then when we got to Gmunden Mummy and I lifted Hanna out and put her on the horse. The coachman sat up in front, and Hanna had the old whip" (the whip he had last year) "and whipped the horse and kept on saying 'Gee-up', and it was such fun, and the coachman whipped too.—The coachman didn't whip at all, because Hanna had the whip.—The coachman had the reins—Hanna had the reins too." (On each occasion we drove in a carriage from the station to the house. Hans was here trying to reconcile fact and fancy.) "At Gmunden we lifted Hanna down from the horse, and she walked up the steps by herself." (Last year, when Hanna was at Gmunden, she was eight months old. The year before, his mother had been five months gone with child when we arrived at Gmunden.)

'I: "Last year Hanna was there."
Hans: "Last year she drove in the carriage; but the year before that, when she was living with us . . ."'  
'I: "Was she with us already then?"
Hans: "Yes. You were always there; you used always to go in the boat with me, and Anna was our servant."
'I: "But that wasn't last year. Hanna wasn't alive then."
Hans: "Yes, she was alive then. Even while she was still travelling in the box she could run about and she could say
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

‘Anna.’ (She has only been able to do so for the last four months.)

‘I:’ ‘But she wasn’t with us at all then.’

‘Hans:’ ‘Oh yes, she was; she was with the stork.’

‘I:’ ‘How old is she, then?’

‘Hans:’ ‘She’ll be two years old in the autumn. Hanna was there, you know she was.’

‘I:’ ‘And when was she with the stork in the stork-box?’

‘Hans:’ ‘A long time before she travelled in the box, a very long time.’

‘I:’ ‘How long has Hanna been able to walk, then? When she was at Gmunden she couldn’t walk yet.’

‘Hans:’ ‘Not last year; but other times she could.’

‘I:’ ‘But Hanna’s only been at Gmunden once.’

‘Hans:’ ‘No. She’s been twice. Yes, that’s it. I can remember quite well. Ask Mummy, she’ll tell you soon enough.’

‘I:’ ‘It’s not true, all the same.’

‘Hans:’ ‘Yes, it is true. When she was at Gmunden the first time she could walk and ride, and later on she had to be carried.—No. It was only later on that she rode, and last year she had to be carried.’

‘I:’ ‘But it’s only quite a short time that she’s been walking. At Gmunden she couldn’t walk.’

‘Hans:’ ‘Yes. Just you write it down. I can remember quite well.—Why are you laughing?’

‘I:’ ‘Because you’re a fraud; because you know quite well that Hanna’s only been at Gmunden once.’

‘Hans:’ ‘No, that isn’t true. The first time she rode on the horse ... and the second time ...’ (He showed signs of evident uncertainty.)

‘I:’ ‘Perhaps the horse was Mummy?’

‘Hans:’ ‘No, a real horse in a fly.’

‘I:’ ‘But we used always to have a carriage with two horses.’

‘Hans:’ ‘Well, then, it was a carriage and pair.’

Analysis of the Phobia of a Five-Year-Old Boy

‘Anna’ said. (She can only do so for the last four months.)

‘I:’ ‘But she wasn’t with us at all then.’

‘Hans:’ ‘Oh yes, she was; she was with the stork.’

‘I:’ ‘How old is she, then?’

‘Hans:’ ‘She’ll be two years old in the autumn. Hanna was there, you know she was.’

‘I:’ ‘And when was she with the stork in the stork-box?’

‘Hans:’ ‘A long time before she travelled in the box, a very long time.’

‘I:’ ‘How long has Hanna been able to walk, then? When she was at Gmunden she couldn’t walk yet.’

‘Hans:’ ‘Not last year; but other times she could.’

‘I:’ ‘But Hanna’s only been at Gmunden once.’

‘Hans:’ ‘No. She’s been twice. Yes, that’s it. I can remember quite well. Ask Mummy, she’ll tell you soon enough.’

‘I:’ ‘It’s not true, all the same.’

‘Hans:’ ‘Yes, it is true. When she was at Gmunden the first time she could walk and ride, and later on she had to be carried.—No. It was only later on that she rode, and last year she had to be carried.’

‘I:’ ‘But it’s only quite a short time that she’s been walking. At Gmunden she couldn’t walk.’

‘Hans:’ ‘Yes. Just you write it down. I can remember quite well.—Why are you laughing?’

‘I:’ ‘Because you’re a fraud; because you know quite well that Hanna’s only been at Gmunden once.’

‘Hans:’ ‘No, that isn’t true. The first time she rode on the horse ... and the second time ...’ (He showed signs of evident uncertainty.)

‘I:’ ‘Perhaps the horse was Mummy?’

‘Hans:’ ‘No, a real horse in a fly.’

‘I:’ ‘But we used always to have a carriage with two horses.’

‘Hans:’ ‘Well, then, it was a carriage and pair.’

Ich: »Aber da war sie doch noch gar nicht bei uns.«
Hans: »O ja, da war sie doch beim Storche.«
Ich: »Wie alt ist denn die Hanna?«
Hans: »Sie wird im Herbst 2 Jahre. Die Hanna war doch da, du weißt es doch.«
Ich: »Und wann war sie beim Storche in der Storchennest?«
Hans: »Schon lange, bevor sie in der Kiste gefahren ist. Schon sehr lange.«

Ich: »Wie lange kann denn die Hanna gehen? Wie sie in Gmunden war, hat sie noch nicht gehen können.«
Hans: »Voriges Jahr nicht, sonst schon.«
Ich: »Die Hanna war doch nur einmal in Gmunden.«
Hans: »Nein! Sie war zweimal; ja, das ist richtig. Ich kann mich sehr gut erinnern. Frag’ nur die Mamm, die wird dir’s schon sagen.«
Ich: »Das ist doch nicht wahr.«
Hans: »Ja, das ist wahr. Wie sie in Gmunden das erstemal war, hat sie gehen und reiten können und später hat man sie tragen müssen.—Nein, später ist sie erst geritten und voriges Jahr hat man sie tragen müssen.«

Ich: »Sie geht aber doch erst ganz kurze Zeit. In Gmunden hat sie nicht gehen können.«
Hans: »Ja, schreib’s nur auf. Ich kann mich ganz gut erinnern.—Warum lachst du?«
Ich: »Weil du ein Schwindler bist, weil du ganz gut weißt, daß die Hanna nur einmal in Gmunden war.«
Hans: »Nein, das ist nicht wahr. Das erstemal ist sie auf dem Pferde geritten ... und das zweitemal (wird offenbar unsicher).«

Ich: »War das Pferd vielleicht die Mamm?«
Hans: »Nein, ein wirkliches Pferd, beim Einspänner.«
Ich: »Wir sind doch immer mit einem Zweispänner gefahren.«
Hans: »So war’s halt ein Fiaker.«
"I: "What did Hanna eat inside the box?"

"Hans: "They put in bread-and-butter for her, and herring, and radishes" (the sort of thing we used to have for supper at Gmunden), "and as Hanna went along she buttered her bread-and-butter and ate fifty meals."

"I: "Didn't Hanna scream?"

"Hans: "No."

"I: "What did she do, then?"

"Hans: "Sat quite still inside."

"I: "Didn't she push about?"

"Hans: "No, she kept on eating all the time and didn't stir once. She drank up two big mugs of coffee—by the morning it was all gone, and she left the bits behind in the box, the leaves of the two radishes and a knife for cutting the radishes. She gobbled everything up like a hare: one minute and it was all finished. It was a joke. Hanna and I really travelled together in the box; I slept the whole night in the box." (We did in fact, two years ago, make the journey to Gmunden by night.) "And Mummy travelled in the railway carriage. And we kept on eating all the time when we were driving in the carriage, too; it was jolly.—She didn't ride on a horse at all..." (he now became undecided, for he knew that we had driven with two horses) "... she sat in the carriage. Yes, that's how it was, but Hanna and I drove quite by ourselves... Mummy rode on the horse, and Karoline" (our maid last year) "on the other... I say, what I'm telling you isn't a bit true."

"I: "What isn't true?"

"Hans: "None of it is. I say, let's put Hanna and me in the box and I'll widdle into the box. I'll just widdle into my knickers; I don't care a bit; there's nothing at all shameful in it. I say, that isn't a joke, you know; but it's great fun, though."

1 'The box standing in the front hall which we had taken to Gmunden as luggage.'
“Then he told me the story of how the stork came—the same story as yesterday, except that he left out the part about the stork taking his hat when he went away.

‘I: “Where did the stork keep his latch-key?”
‘Hans: “In his pocket.”
‘I: “And where’s the stork’s pocket?”
‘Hans: “In his beak.”

‘I: “It’s in his beak! I’ve never seen a stork yet with a key in his beak.”
‘Hans: “How else could he have got in? How did the stork come in at the door, then? No, it isn’t true; I just made a mistake. The stork rang at the front door and some one let him in.”

‘I: “And how did he ring?”
‘Hans: “He rang the bell.”
‘I: “How did he do that?”
‘Hans: “He took his beak and pressed on it with his beak.”

‘I: “And did he shut the door again?”
‘Hans: “No, a maid shut it. She was up already, you see, and opened the door for him and shut it.”

‘I: “Where does the stork live?”
‘Hans: “Where? In the box where he keeps the little girls. At Schönbrunn, perhaps.”

‘I: “I’ve never seen a box at Schönbrunn.”
‘Hans: “It must be farther off, then.—Do you know how the stork opens the box? He takes his beak—the box has got a key, too—he takes his beak, lifts up one” (i.e. one-half of the beak) “and unlocks it like this.” (He demonstrated the process on the lock of the writing-table.) “There’s a handle on it too.”

‘I: “Isn’t a little girl like that too heavy for him?”
‘Hans: “Oh no.”
‘I: “I say, doesn’t a bus look like a stork-box?”
‘Hans: “Yes.”

‘I: “And a furniture-wagon?”
'Hans: "And a scallywaggon" ("scallywag"—a term of abuse for naughty children) "too."

'April 17th. Yesterday Hans carried out his long-premeditated scheme of going across into the courtyard opposite. He would not do it to-day, as there was a cart standing at the loading dock exactly opposite the entrance gates. "When a cart stands there," he said to me, "I'm afraid I shall tease the horses and they'll fall down and make a row with their feet."

'I: "How does one tease horses?"
'Hans: "When you're cross with them you tease them, and when you shout 'Gee-up'."

'I: "Have you ever teased horses?"
'Hans: "Yes, quite often. I'm afraid I shall do it, but I don't really."

'I: "Did you ever tease horses at Gmunden?"
'Hans: "No."

'I: "But you like teasing them?"
'Hans: "Oh yes, very much."

'I: "Would you like to whip them?"
'Hans: "Yes."

'I: "Would you like to beat the horses as Mummy beats Hanna? You like that too, you know."

'Hans: "It doesn't do the horses any harm when they're beaten." (I said this to him once to mitigate his fear of seeing horses whipped.) "Once I really did it. Once I had the whip, and whipped the horse, and it fell down and made a row with its feet."

'I: "When?"
'Hans: "At Gmunden."

'I: "A real horse? Harnessed to a cart?"
'Hans: "It wasn't in the cart."

1 'Hans has often been very much terrified when drivers beat their horses and shout "Gee-up".
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

"I: "Where was it, then?"
"Hans: "I just held it so that it shouldn't run away." (Of course, all this sounded most improbable.)
"I: "Where was that?"
"Hans: "Near the trough."
"I: "Who let you? Had the coachman left the horse standing there?"
"Hans: "It was just a horse from the stables."
"I: "How did it get to the trough?"
"Hans: "I took it there."
"I: "Where from? Out of the stables?"
"Hans: "I took it out because I wanted to beat it."
"I: "Was there no one in the stables?"
"Hans: "Oh yes, Loisl." (The coachman at Gmunden.)
"I: "Did he let you?"
"Hans: "I talked nicely to him, and he said I might do it."
"I: "What did you say to him?"
"Hans: "Could I take the horse and whip it and shout at it."

And he said 'Yes'.
"I: "Did you whip it a lot?"
"Hans: "What I've told you isn't the least true."
"I: "How much of it's true?"
"Hans: "None of it's true; I only told it you for fun."
"I: "You never took a horse out of the stables?"
"Hans: "Oh no."
"I: "But you wanted to."
"Hans: "Oh yes, wanted to. I've thought it to myself."
"I: "At Gmunden?"
"Hans: "No, only here. I thought it in the morning when I was quite undressed; no, in the morning in bed."
"I: "Why did you never tell me about it?"
"Hans: "I didn't think of it."
"I: "You thought it to yourself because you saw it in the street."
"Hans: "Yes."

Ich: »Wo war's denn?«
Hans: »Ich hab's halt gehalten, daß es nicht davonrennen soll. « (Das klang natürlich alles unwahrscheinlich.)
Ich: »Wo war das?«
Hans: »Beim Brunnen.«
Ich: »Wer hat's dir erlaubt? Hat's der Kutscher dort stehen lassen?«
Hans: »Halt ein Pferd vom Stalle.«
Ich: »Wie ist es zum Brunnen gekommen?«
Hans: »Ich hab's hinge führt.«
Ich: »Woher? Aus dem Stalle?«
Hans: »Ich hab's herausgeführt, weil ich es hab' wollen peitschen. «
Ich: »War im Stalle niemand?«

Hans: »O ja, der Loisl (der Kutscher in Gmunden).«
Ich: »Hat er dir's erlaubt?«
Hans: »Ich hab' mit ihm lieb geredet, und er hat gesagt, ich darf es tun.«
Ich: »War hast du ihm gesagt?«
Hans: »Ob ich das Pferd nehmen darf und peitschen und schreien. Er hat gesagt, ja.«
Ich: »Hast du's viel peitscht?«
Hans: »Was ich dir da erzählt, ist gar nicht wahr.«
Ich: »Was ist davon wahr?«
Hans: »Nix ist davon wahr, das hab' ich nur im Spaß erzählt.«
Ich: »Du hast nie ein Pferd aus dem Stalle geführt?«
Hans: »O nein!«
Ich: »Gewünscht hast du dir's.«
Hans: »O, gewünscht schon, gedacht hab' ich mir's.«
Ich: »In Gmunden?«
Hans: »Nein, erst hier. In der Früh hab' ich mir's schon gedacht, wie ich ganz angezogen war; nein, in der Früh im Bette.«
Ich: »Warum hast du mir's nie erzählt?«
Hans: »Ich hab' nicht d'ran gedacht.«
Ich: »Du hast dir's gedacht, weil du auf die Straßen gesehen hast.«
Haus: »Ja!«

Analyse der Phobie eines fünfundjährigen Knaben

Ich: »Wo war's denn?«
Hans: »Ich hab's halt gehalten, daß es nicht davonrennen soll. « (Das klang natürlich alles unwahrscheinlich.)
Ich: »Wo war das?«
Hans: »Beim Brunnen.«
Ich: »Wer hat's dir erlaubt? Hat's der Kutscher dort stehen lassen? «
Hans: »Halt ein Pferd vom Stalle.«
Ich: »Wie ist es zum Brunnen gekommen? «
Hans: »Ich hab's hinge führt.«
Hans: »Ich hab's herausgeführt, weil ich es hab' wollen peitschen. «
Ich: »War im Stalle niemand? «

Hans: »O ja, der Loisl (der Kutscher in Gmunden). «
Ich: »Hat er dir's erlaubt? «
Hans: »Ich hab' mit ihm lieb geredet, und er hat gesagt, ich darf es tun. «
Ich: »War hast du ihm gesagt? «
Hans: »Ob ich das Pferd nehmen darf und peitschen und schreien. Er hat gesagt, ja. «
Ich: »Hast du's viel peitscht? «
Hans: »Was ich dir da erzählt, ist gar nicht wahr. «
Ich: »Was ist davon wahr? «
Hans: »Nix ist davon wahr, das hab' ich nur im Spaß erzählt. «
Ich: »Du hast nie ein Pferd aus dem Stalle geführt? «
Hans: »O nein! «
Ich: »Gewünscht hast du dir's. «
Hans: »O, gewünscht schon, gedacht hab' ich mir's. «
Ich: »In Gmunden? «
Hans: »Nein, erst hier. In der Früh hab' ich mir's schon gedacht, wie ich ganz angezogen war; nein, in der Früh im Bette. «
Ich: »Warum hast du mir's nie erzählt? «
Hans: »Ich hab' nicht d'ran gedacht. «
Ich: »Du hast dir's gedacht, weil du auf die Straßen gesehen hast. «
Haus: »Ja! «
\textit{CASE HISTORY AND ANALYSIS} 81

'I: "Which would you really like to beat? Mummy, Hanna, or me?"

\textit{Hans:} "Mummy."

'I: "Why?"

\textit{Hans:} "I should just like to beat her."

'I: "When did you ever see any one beating their Mummy?"

\textit{Hans:} "I've never seen any one do it, never in all my life."

'I: "And yet you'd just like to do it. How would you like to set about it?"

\textit{Hans:} "With a carpet-beater." (His mother often threatens to beat him with the carpet-beater.)

'I was obliged to break off the conversation for to-day.

In the street Hans explained to me that buses, furniture-vans, and coal-carts were stork-box carts.

That is to say, pregnant women. Hans's access of sadism immediately before cannot be unconnected with the present theme.

\textit{April 21st. This morning Hans said that he had thought as follows:} "There was a train at Lainz and I travelled with my Lainz Grandmummy to the Hauptzollamt station. You hadn't got down from the bridge yet, and the second train was already at St. Veit.1 When you came down, the train was there already, and we got in."

'(Hans was at Lainz yesterday. In order to get on to the departure platform one has to cross a bridge. From the platform one can see along the line as far as St. Veit. When you came down, the train was there already, and we got in."

'Hans was at Lainz yesterday. In order to get on to the departure platform one has to cross a bridge. From the platform one can see along the line as far as St. Veit. The whole thing is a trifle obscure. Hans's original thought had no doubt been that he had gone off by the first train, which I had missed, and that then a second train had come in...

\textit{1 [Unter St. Veit: one station farther away from Vienna than Lainz. Owing to the straightness of the line, a traveller waiting on the platform at Lainz for a train to Vienna can see it approaching all the way from Unter St. Veit and even beyond.]}

---

\textit{Krankengeschichte und Analyse}

\textit{Ich:} »Wen möchtest du eigentlich gerne schlagen, die Mammi, die Hanna oder mich?«

\textit{Hans:} »Die Mammi.«

\textit{Ich:} »Warum?«

\textit{Hans:} »Ich möchte sie halt schlagen.«

\textit{Ich:} »Wann hast du gesehen, daß jemand eine Mammi schlägt?«

\textit{Hans:} »Ich hab's noch nie gesehen, in meinem Leben nie.«

\textit{Ich:} »Und du möchtest es halt doch machen. Wie möchtest du das tun?«

\textit{Hans:} »Mit dem Pracker.« (Mit dem Pracker droht die Mama öfter ihn zu schlagen.)

Für heute mußte ich das Gespräch abbrechen.

Auf der Gasse erklärte mir Hans: Stellwagen, Möbelwagen, Kohlenwagen seien Storchkistenwagen.

Das heißt also: gravide Frauen. Die sadistische Anwendung unmittelbar vorher kann nicht außer Zusammenhang mit unserem Thema sein.


73
from Unter St. Veit and that I had gone after him in it. But he had distorted a part of this runaway phantasy, so that he said finally: "Both of us only got away by the second train."

'This phantasy is related to the last one [p. 65], which was not interpreted, and according to which we took too long to put on our clothes in the station at Gmunden, so that the train carried us on.)

'Afternoon, in front of the house. Hans suddenly ran indoors as a carriage with two horses came along. I could see nothing unusual about it, and asked him what was wrong. "The horses are so proud," he said, "that I'm afraid they'll fall down." (The coachman was reining the horses in tight, so that they were trotting with short steps and holding their heads high. In fact their action was "proud").

'I asked him who it really was that was so proud.

'He: "You are, when I come into bed with Mummy."

'I: "So you want me to fall down?"

'Hans: "Yes. You've got to be naked" (meaning "bare-foot", as Fritz! had been) "and knock up against a stone and bleed, and then I'll be able to be alone with Mummy for a little bit at all events. When you come up into our flat I'll be able to run away quick so that you don't see."

'I: "Can you remember who it was that knocked up against the stone?"

'He: "Yes, Fritz!"

'I: "When Fritz! fell down, what did you think?"

'He: "That you should hit the stone and tumble down."

'I: "So you'd like to go to Mummy?"

'He: "Yes."

'I: "What do I really scold you for?"

'He: "I don't know." (!!)

'I: "Why?"

'He: "Because you're cross."

1 So that in fact Fritz! did fall down—which he at one time denied. [See p. 59.]
CASE HISTORY AND ANALYSIS

'I: "But that's not true."
'Hans: "Yes, it is true. You're cross. I know you are. It must be true."

'Evidently, therefore, my explanation that only little boys come into bed with their Mummies and that big ones sleep in their own beds had not impressed him very much.

'I suspect that his desire to "tease" the horse, i.e. to beat it and shout at it, does not apply to his mother, as he pretended, but to me. No doubt he only put her forward because he was unwilling to admit the alternative to me. For the last few days he has been particularly affectionate to me.'

Speaking with the air of superiority which is so easily acquired after the event, we may correct Hans's father, and explain that the boy's wish to "tease" the horse had two constituents; it was compounded of an obscure sadistic desire for his mother and of a clear impulse for revenge against his father. The latter could not be reproduced until the former's turn had come to emerge in connection with the pregnancy complex. In the process of the formation of a phobia from the unconscious thoughts underlying it, condensation takes place; and for that reason the course of the analysis can never follow that of the development of the neurosis.

'April 22nd. This morning Hans again thought something to himself: "A street-boy was riding on a truck, and the guard came and undressed the boy quite naked and made him stand there till next morning, and in the morning the boy gave the guard 50,000 florins so that he could go on riding on the truck."

'(The Nordbahn [Northern Railway] runs past opposite our house. In a siding there stood a trolley on which Hans once saw a street-boy riding. He wanted to do so too; but I told him it was not allowed, and that if he did the guard would be after him. A second element in this phantasy is Hans's repressed wish to be naked.)'

Krankengeschichte und Analyse

Ich: »Das ist doch nicht wahr!«
Er: »Ja, das ist wahr, du tust eifern, das weiß ich. Das muß wahr sein.«

Meine Erklärung, daß nur kleine Buben zur Mammi ins Bett kommen, große in ihrem eigenen Bett schlafen, hat ihm also nicht sehr imponiert.

Ich vermute, daß der Wunsch, das Pferd zu »necken«, d. h. schlagen, anschreien, nicht, wie er angab, auf die Mama, sondern auf mich geht. Er hat die Mama wohl nur vorgeschoben, weil er mir das andere nicht eingestehen wollte. In den letzten Tagen ist er von besonderer Zärtlichkeit gegen mich.

Mit der Überlegenheit, die man »nachträglich« so leicht erwirbt, wollen wir den Vater korrigieren, daß der Wunsch Hansens, das Pferd zu »necken«, doppelt gefügt ist, zusammengesetzt aus einem dunklen, sadistischen Gelüste auf die Mutter und einem klaren Rachedrang gegen den Vater. Der letztere konnte nicht eher reproduziert werden, als bis im Zusammenhange des Graviditätskomplexes das erstere an die Reihe gekommen war. Bei der Bildung der Phobie aus den unbewußten Gedanken findet ja eine Verdichtung statt; darum kann der Weg der Analyse niemals den Entwicklungsgang der Neurose wiederholen.


(Vis-à-vis von uns fährt die Nordbahn. Auf einem Stockgeleise steht eine Draisine, auf der Hans einmal einen Gassenbuben fahren sah, was er auch tun wollte. Ich habe ihm gesagt, das dürfe man nicht, sonst käme der Kondukteur. Ein zweites Element der Phantasie ist der verdrängte Nacktheitswunsch.)
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

It has been noticeable for some time that Hans's imagination was being coloured by images derived from traffic, and was advancing systematically from horses, which draw vehicles, to railways. In the same way a railway-phobia eventually becomes associated with every street-phobia.¹

'At lunch-time I was told that Hans had been playing all the morning with an india-rubber doll which he called Grete. [Cf. p. 32.] He had pushed a small penknife in through the opening to which the little tin squeaker had originally been attached, and had then torn the doll's legs apart so as to let the knife drop out. He had said to the nurse-maid, pointing between the doll's legs: "Look, there's its widdler!"

'I: "What was it you were playing at with your doll to-day?"

'Hans: "I tore its legs apart. Do you know why? Because there was a knife inside it belonging to Mummy. I put it in at the place where the button ² squeaks, and then I tore its legs apart and it came out there."

'I: "Why did you tear its legs apart? So that you could see its widdler?"

'He: "Its widdler was there before; I could have seen it anyhow."

'I: "What did you put the knife in for?"

'He: "I don't know."

'I: "Well, what does the knife look like?"

'He brought it to me.

'I: "Did you think it was a baby, perhaps?"

'He: "No, I didn't think anything at all; but I believe the stork got a baby once—or some one."

'I: "When?"

1 [This characteristic of phobias is discussed below on p. 125.]

2 ["Der Knopf." So in the first edition. In all subsequent ones 'der Kopf' ("the head"). This latter is almost certainly wrong; see below, p. 130, where the hole is described as being 'in the body'.]
'He: "Once. I heard so—or didn’t I hear it at all?—or did I say it wrong?"
'I: "What does ‘say it wrong’ mean?"
'He: "That it’s not true."
'I: "Everything one says is a bit true."
'He: "Well, yes, a little bit."
'I (after changing the subject): "How do you think chickens are born?"
'He: "The stork just makes them grow; the stork makes chickens grow—no, God does."
'I explained to him that chickens lay eggs, and that out of the eggs there come other chickens.
'Hans laughed.
'I: "Why do you laugh?"
'He: "Because I like what you’ve told me."
'He said he had seen it happen already.
'I: "Where?"
'Hans: "You did it."
'I: "Where did I lay an egg?"
'Hans: "At Gmunden; you laid an egg in the grass, and all at once a chicken came hopping out. You laid an egg once; I know you did, I know it for certain. Because Mummy said so."
'I: "I’ll ask Mummy if that’s true."
'Hans: "It isn’t true a bit. But I once laid an egg, and a chicken came hopping out."
'I: "Where?"
'Hans: "At Gmunden I lay down in the grass—no, I knelt down—and the children didn’t look on at me, and all at once in the morning I said: ‘Look for it, children; I laid an egg yesterday.’ And all at once they looked, and all at once they saw an egg, and out of it there came a little Hans. Well, what are you laughing for? Mummy didn’t know about it, and Karoline didn’t know, because no one was looking on, and all at once I laid an egg, and all at once it

Er: »Einmal. Ich hab’s gehört, oder hab’ ichs gar nicht gehört, oder hab’ ich mich verrecket?«
Ich: »Was heißt verrecket?«
Er: »Es ist nicht wahr.«
Ich: »Alles, was man sagt, ist ein bissel wahr.«
Er: »No ja, ein bißchen.«
Ich (nach einem Übergange): »Wie hast du dir gedacht, kommen die Hendl auf die Welt?«
Er: »Der Storch läßt sie halt wachsen, der Storch läßt die Hendl wachsen – nein, der liebe Gott.«
Ich erkläre ihm, daß die Hendl Eier legen und aus den Eiern wieder Hendl kommen.
Hans lacht.
Ich: »Warum lachst du?«
Er: »Weil mir’s gefällt, was du mir da erzählst.«
Er sagt, er habe das bereits gesehen.
Ich: »Wo denn?«
Hans: »Bei dir!«
Ich: »Wo hab’ ich ein Ei gelegt?«
Ich: »Ich werde die Mammi fragen, ob das wahr ist.«

Hans: »Das ist gar nicht wahr, aber ich hab’ schon einmal ein Ei gelegt, da ist ein Hendl außigsprungen.«
Ich: »Wo?«
Hans: »In Gmunden habe ich mich ins Gras gelegt, nein gekniet und da haben die Kinder gar nicht hergeschaut, und auf einmal hab’ ich gesagt: Suchts, Kinder, gestern hab’ ich ein Ei gelegt! Und auf einmal haben sie geschaut und auf einmal haben sie ein Ei gesehen und aus dem ist ein kleiner Hans gekommen. Was lachst du denn? Die Mammi weiß es nicht und die Karolin' weiß es nicht, weil niemand zugeschaut hat und auf einmal hab’ ich ein Ei gelegt und auf einmal
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

was there. Really and truly. Daddy, when does a chicken grow out of an egg? When it's left alone? Must it be eaten?"

'I explained the matter to him.

'Hans: "All right, let's leave it with the hen; then a chicken'll grow. Let's pack it up in the box and let's take it to Gmunden."

As his parents still hesitated to give him the information which was already long overdue, little Hans had by a bold stroke taken the conduct of the analysis into his own hands. By means of a brilliant symptomatic act, 'Look!' he had said to them, 'this is how I imagine that a birth takes place.' What he had told the maid-servant about the meaning of his game with the doll had been insincere; to his father he explicitly denied that he had only wanted to see its widdler. After his father had told him, as a kind of payment on account, how chickens come out of eggs, Hans gave a combined expression to his dissatisfaction, his mistrust, and his superior knowledge in a charming piece of persiflage, which culminated with his last words in an unmistakable allusion to his sister's birth.

'I: "What were you playing at with your doll?"

'Hans: "I said 'Grete' to her."

'I: "Why?"

'Hans: "Because I said 'Grete' to her."

'I: "How did you play?"

'Hans: "I just looked after her like a real baby."

'I: "Would you like to have a little girl?"

'Hans: "Oh yes. Why not? I should like to have one, but Mummy mustn't have one; I don't like that."

(He has often expressed this view before. He is afraid of losing still more of his position if a third child arrives.)

'I: "But only women have children."

'Hans: "I'm going to have a little girl."

'I: "Where will you get her, then?"

'Hans: "Why, from the stork. He takes the little girl out, and all at once the little girl lays an egg, and out of the egg there

Hans hat die Leitung der Analyse mit einem kühnen Griffe an sich gerissen, da die Eltern mit den längst berechtigten Aufklärungen zögerten, und in einer glänzenden Symptomhandlung mitgeteilt: »Seht ihr, so stelle ich mir eine Geburt vor.« Was er dem Dienstmädchen über den Sinn seines Spiels mit der Puppe gesagt, war nicht aufrichtig; dem Vater gegenüber weist er es direkt ab, daß er nur den Wiwimacher sehen wollte. Nachdem ihm der Vater gleichsam als Abschlagszahlung die Entstehung der Hühner aus dem Ei erzählt hat, vereinigen sich seine Unbefriedigung, sein Mißtrauen und sein Besserwissen zu einer herrlichen Persiflage, die sich in seinen letzten Worten zu einer deutlichen Anspielung auf die Geburt der Schwester steigert.

'I: »Was hast du mit der Puppe gespielt?«

'Hans: »Ich hab’ ihr Grete gesagt.«

'I: »Warum?«

'Hans: »Weil ich ihr Grete gesagt hab’.«

'I: »Wie hast du dich gespielt?«

'Hans: »Ich hab’ sie halt so gepflegt wie ein wirkliches Kind.«

'I: »Möchtest du gerne ein kleines Mädel haben?«

'Hans: »O ja. Warum nicht? Ich mag eins kriegen, aber die Mammi darf keines kriegen, ich mag’s nicht.«

(Er hat sich schon oft so ausgesprochen. Er fürdert durch ein drittes Kind noch weiter verkürzt zu werden.)

'I: »Es bekommt doch nur eine Frau ein Kind.«

'Hans: »Ich krieg ein Mädel.«

'I: »Wo kriegen du es denn her?«

'Hans: »No, vom Storch. Er nimmt das Mädel heraus, und das Mädel legt auf einmal ein Ei und aus dem Ei kommt dann noch eine
comes another Hanna—another Hanna. Out of Hanna there comes another Hanna. No, one Hanna comes out.”

'I: “You'd like to have a little girl.”

'Hans: “Yes, next year I’m going to have one, and she'll be called Hanna too.”

'I: “But why isn't Mummy to have a little girl?”

'Hans: “Because I want to have a little girl for once.”

'I: “But you can’t have a little girl.”

'Hans: “Oh yes, boys have girls and girls have boys.”

'I: “Boys don’t have children. Only women, only Mummies have children.”

'Hans: “But why shouldn’t I?”

'I: “Because God’s arranged it like that.”

'Hans: “But why don’t you have one? Oh yes, you’ll have one all right. Just you wait.”

'I: “I shall have to wait some time.”

'Hans: “But I belong to you.”

'I: “But Mummy brought you into the world. So you belong to Mummy and me.”

'Hans: “Does Hanna belong to me or to Mummy?”

'I: “To Mummy.”

'Hans: “No, to me. Why not to me and Mummy?”

'I: “Hanna belongs to me, Mummy, and you.”

'Hans: “There you are, you see.”

So long as the child is in ignorance of the female genitals, there is naturally a vital gap in his comprehension of sexual matters.

On April 24th my wife and I enlightened Hans up to a certain point: we told him that children grow inside their Mummy, and are then brought into the world by being pressed out of her like a “lump”, and that this involves a great deal of pain.

1 Here is another bit of infantile sexual theory with an unsuspected meaning.
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

In the afternoon we went out in front of the house. There was a visible improvement in his state. He ran after carts, and the only thing that betrayed a remaining trace of his anxiety was the fact that he did not venture away from the neighbourhood of the street-door and could not be induced to go for any considerable walk.

On April 25th Hans butted me in the stomach with his head, as he has already done once before [p. 42]. I asked him if he was a goat.

“Yes,” he said, “a ram.” I enquired where he had seen a ram.

He: “At Gmunden: Fritzl had one.” (Fritzl had a real lamb to play with.)

I: “You must tell me about the lamb. What did it do?”

Hans: “You know, Fräulein Mizzi” (a school-mistress who lived in the house) “used always to put Hanna on the lamb, but it couldn’t stand up then and it couldn’t butt. If you went up to it it used to butt, because it had horns. Fritzl used to lead it on a string and tie it to a tree. He always tied it to a tree.”

I: “Did the lamb butt you?”

Hans: “It jumped up at me; Fritzl took me up to it once... I went up to it once and didn’t know, and all at once it jumped up at me. It was such fun—I wasn’t frightened.”

This was certainly untrue.

I: “Are you fond of Daddy?”

Hans: “Oh yes.”

I: “Or perhaps not.”

Hans was playing with a little toy horse. At that moment the horse fell down, and Hans shouted out: “The horse has fallen down! Look what a row it’s making!”

I: “You’re a little vexed with Daddy because Mummy’s fond of him.”

Hans: “No.”

---

Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

Nachmittags sind wir vor dem Haus. Es ist bei ihm eine sichtliche Erleichterung eingetreten, er läuft Wagen nach, und nur der Umstand, daß er sich aus der Nähe des Haupttores nicht wegzutraut, respektive zu keinem größeren Spaziergange zu bewegen ist, verrät den Rest von Angst.

Am 25. April rennt mir Hans mit dem Kopfe in den Bauch, was er schon früher einmal getan hat [S. 41]. Ich frage ihn, ob er eine Ziege ist.

Er sagt: »Ja ein Wieder« (Widder). - »Wo er einen Widder gesehen hat?«

Er: »In Gmunden, der Fritzl hat einen gehabt.« (Der Fritzl hat ein kleines, lebendes Schaf zum Spielen gehabt.)

Ich: »Von dem Lamperl mußt du mir erzählen, was hat es gemacht?«

Hans: »Du weißt, das Fräulein Mizzi (eine Lehrerin, die im Hause wohnte) hat immer die Hanna auf das Lamperl gesetzt, da hat es aber nicht aufstehen können, da hat es nicht stoßen können. Wenn man hingehet, stößt es schon, weil es Hörner hat. Der Fritzl tut’s halt an der Schnur führen und an einen Baum anbinden. Er bindet’s immer an einen Baum an.«

Ich: »Hat das Lamperl dich gestoßen?«

Hans: »Hinaufgesprungen ist es auf mich, der Fritzl hat mich einmal hingegeben... ich bin einmal hingegangen und hab’s nicht gewußt, und auf einmal ist es auf mich hinaufgesprungen. Das war so lustig — erschrocken bin ich nicht.«

Das ist gewiß unwahr.

Ich: »Hast du den Vatti gern?«

Hans: »O ja.«

Ich: »Vielleicht auch nicht?«

Hans (spielt mit einem kleinen Pferd.) In diesem Moment fällt das Pferdl um. Er schreit: »Das Pferdl ist umgefallen! Siehst du, wie’s Krawall macht?«

Ich: »Etwas ärgert dich am Vatti, daß ihn die Mammi gern hat.«

Hans: »Nein.«
"I: Then why do you always cry whenever Mummy gives me a kiss? It's because you're jealous."

'Hans: "Jealous, yes."

'I: "You'd like to be Daddy yourself."

'Hans: "Oh yes."

'I: "What would you like to do if you were Daddy?"

'Hans: "And you were Hans? I'd like to take you to Lainz every Sunday—no, every week-day too. If I were Daddy I'd be ever so nice and good."

'I: "But what would you like to do with Mummy?"

'Hans: "Take her to Lainz, too."

'I: "And what besides?"

'Hans: "Nothing."

'I: "Then why were you jealous?"

'Hans: "I don't know."

'I: "Were you jealous at Gmunden, too?"

'Hans: "Not at Gmunden." (This is not true.) "At Gmunden I had my own things. I had a garden at Gmunden and children too."

'I: "Can you remember how the cow got a calf?"

'Hans: "Oh yes. It came in a cart." (No doubt he had been told this at Gmunden; another attack on the stork theory.) "And another cow pressed it out of its behind." (This was already the fruit of his enlightenment, which he was trying to bring into harmony with the cart theory.)

'I: "It isn't true that it came in a cart; it came out of the cow in the cow-shed."

'Hans disputed this, saying that he had seen the cart in the morning. I pointed out to him that he had probably been told this about the calf having come in a cart. In the end he admitted this, and said: "Most likely Berta told me, or not—or perhaps it was the landlord. He was there and it was at night, so it is true after all, what I've been telling you—or it seems to me nobody told me; I thought it to myself in the night."

s.f. x—0
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

Unless I am mistaken, the calf was taken away in a cart; hence the confusion.

'I: "Why didn't you think it was the stork that brought it?"
'Hans: "I didn't want to think that."
'I: "But you thought the stork brought Hanna?"
'Hans: "In the morning" (of the confinement) "I thought so.—I say, Daddy, was Herr Reisenbichler" (our landlord) "there when the calf came out of the cow?"
'I: "I don't know. Do you think he was?"
'Hans: "I think so... Daddy, have you noticed now and then that horses have something black on their mouths?"
'I: "I've noticed it now and then in the street at Gmunden." ²
'I: "Did you often get into bed with Mummy at Gmunden?"
'Hans: "Yes."
'I: "And you used to think to yourself you were Daddy?"
'Hans: "Yes."
'I: "And then you felt afraid of Daddy?"
'Hans: "You know everything; I didn't know anything."
'I: "When Fritzl fell down you thought: 'If only Daddy would fall down like that!' And when the lamb butted you you thought: 'If only it would butt Daddy! Can you remember the funeral at Gmunden?' (The first funeral that Hans had seen. He often recalls it, and it is no doubt a screen memory.)
'Hans: "Yes. What about it?"
'I: "You thought then that if only Daddy were to die you'd be Daddy."
'Hans: "Yes."
'I: "What carts are you still afraid of?"

¹ Hans, having good reason to mistrust information given him by grown-up people, was considering whether the landlord might not be more trustworthy than his father.
² The train of thought is as follows. For a long time his father had refused to believe what he said about there being something black on horses' mouths, but finally it had been verified [p. 69].
Hans: “All of them.”

Ich: “You know that’s not true.”

Hans: “I’m not afraid of carriages and pair or cabs with one horse. I’m afraid of buses and luggage-carts, but only when they’re loaded up, not when they’re empty. When there’s one horse and the cart’s loaded full up, then I’m afraid; but when there are two horses and it’s loaded full up, then I’m not afraid.”

Ich: “Are you afraid of buses because there are so many people inside?”

Hans: “Because there’s so much luggage on the top.”

Ich: “When Mummy was having Hanna, was she loaded full up too?”

Hans: “Mummy’ll be loaded full up again when she has another one, when another one begins to grow, when another one’s inside her.”

Ich: “And you’d like that?”

Hans: “Yes.”

Ich: “You said you didn’t want Mummy to have another baby.”

Hans: “Well, then she won’t be loaded up again. Mummy said if Mummy didn’t want one, God didn’t want one either. If Mummy doesn’t want one she won’t have one.” (Hans naturally asked yesterday if there were any more babies inside Mummy. I told him not, and said that if God did not wish it none would grow inside her.)

Hans: “But Mummy told me if she didn’t want it no more’d grow, and you say if God doesn’t want it.”

So I told him it was as I had said, upon which he observed: “You were there, though, weren’t you? You know better, for certain.” He then proceeded to cross-question his mother, and she reconciled the two statements by declaring that if she didn’t want it God didn’t want it either.

1 Ce que femme veut Dieu veut. But Hans, with his usual acumen, had once more put his finger upon a most serious problem. [It seems

Ich: »Vor allen:«,
Hans: »Vor Fiakern, Einspännern nicht. Vor Stellwagen, vor Gepäckwagen, aber nur, wenn sie aufgeladen haben, wenn sie aber leer sind, nicht. Wenn es ein Pferd ist und voll aufgeladen hat, da fürchte ich mich, und wenn’s zwei Pferde sind und voll aufgeladen haben, da fürchte ich mich nicht.«

Ich: »Vor den Stellwagen fürchtest du dich, weil drin soviel Leute sind?«

Hans: »Weil am Dach soviel Gepäck ist.«

Ich: »Hat die Mammi, wie sie die Hanna bekommen hat, nicht auch voll aufgeladen?«

Hans: »Die Mammi wird wieder voll aufgeladen sein, wenn sie wieder einmal eins haben wird, bis wieder eins wachsen wird, bis wieder eins drin sein wird.«

Ich: »Das möchtest du halt gern.«

Hans: »Ja.«

Ich: »Du hast gesagt, du willst nicht, daß die Mammi noch ein Kind bekommen soll.«

Hans: »So wird sie halt nicht mehr aufgeladen sein. Die Mammi hat gesagt, wenn die Mammi keins will, will’s der liebe Gott auch nicht. Wird die Mammi auch keins wollen, so wird sie keins bekommen.« (Hans hat natürlich gestern auch gefragt, ob in der Mammi noch Kinder sind. Ich habe ihm gesagt, nein, wenn der liebe Gott nicht will, wird’s in ihr auch nicht wachsen.)

Hans: »Aber die Mammi hat mir gesagt, wenn sie nicht will, wird keins mehr wachsen, und du sagst, wenn der liebe Gott nicht will.«

Ich sagte ihm also, daß es so ist, wie ich gesagt habe, worauf er bemerkte: »Du warst doch dabei? Du weißt es gewiß besser.« – Er stellte also die Mama zur Rede, und die stellte die Konkordanz her, indem sie erklärte, wenn sie nicht wolle, wolle auch der liebe Gott nicht.1

1 Ce que femme veut Dieu veut. Hans hat hier in seinem Scharfsinne wieder ein sehr ernsthaftes Problem entdeckt. [Möglichweise
A PHOBLA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

'I: "It seems to me that, all the same, you do wish Mummy would have a baby."
'Hans: "But I don't want it to happen."
'I: "But you wish for it?"
'Hans: "Oh yes, wish."
'I: "Do you know why you wish for it? It's because you'd like to be Daddy."
'Hans: "Yes... How does it work?"
'I: "How does what work?"
'Hans: "You say Daddies don't have babies; so how does it work, my wanting to be Daddy?"
'I: "You'd like to be Daddy and married to Mummy; you'd like to be as big as me and have a moustache; and you'd like Mummy to have a baby."
'Hans: "And, Daddy, when I'm married I'll only have one if I want to, when I'm married to Mummy, and if I don't want a baby, God won't want it either, when I'm married."
'I: "Would you like to be married to Mummy?"
'Hans: "Oh yes."

It is easy to see that Hans's enjoyment of his phantasy was interfered with by his uncertainty as to the part played by fathers and by his doubts as to whether the begetting of children would be under his control.

On the evening of the same day, as Hans was being put to bed, he said to me: "I say, do you know what I'm going to do now? Now I'm going to talk to Grete till ten o'clock; she's in bed with me. My children are always in bed with me. Can you tell me why that is?"—As he was very sleepy already, I likely that the whole passage from the words 'Hans naturally asked yesterday . . .' down to '... God didn't want it either' should be in brackets, and that it is all a report of what had happened the day before. When Freud was consulted on this point by the translators (in 1923), he agreed that this was probably so, but preferred to have the text left unaltered, since it was a transcript of Hans's father's report.

Analysis der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

Ich: »Mir scheint, du wünschest doch, die Mammi soll ein Kind bekommen?«
Hans: »Aber haben will ich's nicht.«
Ich: »Aber du wünschest es?«
Hans: »Wünschen schon.«
Ich: »Weißt du, warum du es wünschest? Weil du gern der Vatti sein möchst.«
Hans: »Ja... Wie ist die Geschichte?«
Ich: »Welche Geschichte?«
Hans: »Ein Vatti kriegt doch kein Kind, wie ist die Geschichte dann, wenn ich gern der Vatti sein möchst?«
Ich: »Du möchtest der Vatti sein und mit der Mammi verheiratet sein, möchtest so groß sein wie ich und einen Schnurrbart haben und möchtest, daß die Mammi ein Kind bekommen soll.«
Hans: »Vatti, und bis ich verheiratet sein werde, werde ich nur eines kriegen, wenn ich will, wenn ich mit der Mammi verbügert sein werde, und wenn ich kein Kind will, will der liebe Gott auch nicht, wenn ich geheiratet hab.«
Ich: »Möchtest du gern mit der Mammi verheiratet sein?«
Hans: »O ja.«

Man merkt es deutlich, wie das Glück in der Phantasie noch durch die Unsicherheit über die Rolle des Vaters und die Zweifel an der Beherrschung des Kinderkriegens gestört wird.

Am Abend desselben Tages sagt Hans, wie er ins Bett gelegt wird, zu mir: »Du, weißt du, was ich jetzt mach? Jetzt sprech' ich noch bis 10 Uhr mit der Grete, die ist bei mir im Bett. Immer sind meine Kinder bei mir im Bett. Kannst du mir sagen, wie das ist?« — Da er schon sehr schlafich ist,
promised him that we should write it down next day, and
he went to sleep.

'I have already noticed in earlier records that since Hans's
return from Gmunden he has constantly been having phan-
tasies about "his children" [e.g. p. 19], has carried on con-
versations with them, and so on.¹

'So on April 26th I asked him why he was always thinking
of his children.

'Hans: "Why? Because I should so like to have children; but I
don't ever want it; I shouldn't like to have them."

'I: "Have you always imagined that Berta and Olga and
the rest were your children?"

'Hans: "Yes. Franzl, and Fritzl, and Paul too" (his play-
mates at Lainz), "and Lodi." This is an invented girl's
name, that of his favourite child, whom he speaks of most
often—I may here emphasize the fact that the figure of
Lodi is not an invention of the last few days, but existed
before the date of his receiving the latest piece of enlighten-
ment (April 24th).

'I: "Who is Lodi? Is she at Gmunden?"

'Hans: "No."

'I: "Is there a Lodi?"

'Hans: "Yes, I know her."

'I: "Who is she, then?"

'Hans: "The one I've got here."

'I: "What does she look like?"

'Hans: "Look like? Black eyes, black hair... I met her

¹ There is no necessity on this account to assume in Hans the
presence of a feminine strain of desire for having children. It was with
his mother that Hans had had his most blissful experience as a child,
and he was now repeating them, and himself playing the active part,
which was thus necessarily that of mother.

² This startling contradiction was one between phantasy and
reality, between wishing and having. Hans knew that in reality he
was a child and that the other children would only be in his way; but
in phantasy he was a mother and wanted children with whom he
could repeat the endearments that he had himself experienced.
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

Once with Mariedl" (at Gmunden) "as I was going into the town."

"When I went into the matter it turned out that this was an invention."

'I: "So you thought you were their Mummy?"
'Hans: "And really I was their Mummy."
'I: "What did you do with your children?"
'Hans: "I had them to sleep with me, the girls and the boys."
'I: "Every day?"
'Hans: "Why, of course."
'I: "Did you talk to them?"
'Hans: "When I couldn't get all the children into the bed, I put some of the children on the sofa, and some in the pram, and if there were still some left over I took them up to the attic and put them in the box, and if there were any more I put them in the other box."
'I: "So the stork-baby-boxes were in the attic?"
'Hans: "Yes."
'I: "When did you get your children? Was Hanna alive already?"
'Hans: "Yes, she had been a long time."
'I: "But who did you think you'd got the children from?"
'Hans: "Why, from me.""
'I: "But at that time you hadn't any idea that children came from some one."
'Hans: "I thought the stork had brought them." (Clearly a lie and an evasion.) 8

1 It is possible, however, that Hans had exalted into his ideal some one whom he had met casually at Gmunden. The colour of this ideal's eyes and hair, by the way, was copied from his mother.
2 Hans could not help answering from the auto-erotic point of view.
3 They were the children of his phantasy, that is to say, of his masturbation.

mit der Mariedl (in Gmunden) getroffen, wie ich in die Stadt gegangen bin."

"Wie ich Nähere wissen will, stellt sich heraus, daß dies erfunden ist."
Ich: »Du hast also gedacht, du bist die Mamma?«
Hans: »Ich war auch wirklich die Mamma.«

Ich: »Was hast du denn mit den Kindern gemacht?«
Hans: »Bei mir hab' ich sie schlafen lassen, Mädels und Buben.«
Ich: »Jeden Tag?«
Hans: »Na freilich.«
Ich: »Hast du mit ihnen gesprochen?«

Hans: »Wenn alle Kinder nicht ins Bett hineingegangen sind, habe ich welche Kinder aufs Sofa gelegt und welche in den Kinderwagen gesetzt, wenn noch übrig geblieben sind, hab' ich sie an den Boden getragen und in die Kiste gelegt, da waren noch Kinder und ich hab' sie in die andere Kiste gelegt.«
Ich: »Also die Storchenkinderkisten sind am Boden gestanden?«

Hans: »Ja.«
Ich: »Wann hast du die Kinder bekommen? War die Hanna schon auf der Welt?«
Hans: »Ja, schon lange.«
Ich: »Aber von wem hast du dir gedacht, daß du die Kinder bekommen hast?«
Hans: »Nein, von mir.«
Ich: »Damals hast du aber noch gar nicht gewußt, daß die Kinder von einem kommen.«
Hans: »Ich hab' mir gedacht, der Storch hat sie gebracht.« (Offenbar Lüge und Ausflucht) 2.

8 Es könnte doch sein, daß Hans eine zufällige Begegnung in Gmunden zum Ideal erhoben hat, das übrigens in der Farbe von Augen und Haaren der Mutter nachgebildet ist.
1 Hans kann nicht anders als vom Standpunkte des Autoerotismus antworten.
3 Es sind Phantasie-, d. h. Onaniekinder.
"I: "You had Grete in bed with you yesterday, but you know quite well that boys can't have children."

"Hans: "Well, yes. But I believe they can, all the same."

"I: "How did you hit upon the name Lodi? No girl's called that. Lotti, perhaps?"

"Hans: "Oh no, Lodi. I don't know; but it's a beautiful name, all the same."

"I (jokingly): "Perhaps you mean a Schokolodi?"

"Hans (promptly): "No, a Saffalodi, ... because I like eating sausages so much, and salami too."

"I: "I say, doesn't a Saffalodi look like a lump?"

"Hans: "Yes."

"I: "Well, what does a lump look like?"

"Hans: "Black. You know" (pointing at my eyebrows and moustache), "like this and like this."

"I: "And what else? Round like a Saffaladi?"

"Hans: "Yes."

"I: "When you sat on the chamber and a lump came, did you think to yourself you were having a baby?"

"Hans (laughing): "Yes. Even at—— Street, and here as well."

"I: "You know when the bus-horses fell down? [Cf. p. 49 ff.] The bus looked like a baby-box, and when the black horse fell down it was just like..."

"Hans (taking me up): "... like having a baby."

"I: "And what did you think when it made a row with its feet?"

"Hans: "Oh, when I don't want to sit on the chamber and would rather play, then I make a row like this with my feet."

[Cf. p. 54.] (He stamped his feet.)

1 ['Schokolade' is the German for 'chocolate'.]

2 'Saffaladi' means 'Zervelatwurst' ['saveloy', a kind of sausage]. My wife is fond of relating how her aunt always calls it 'Soffilodi'. Hans may have heard this.

3 [Another kind of sausage.]

Krankengeschichte und Analyse

Ich: »Gestern war die Grete bei dir, aber du weißt doch schon, daß ein Bob keine Kinder haben kann.«

Hans: »No ja, ich glaub's aber doch.«

Ich: »Wie bist du auf den Namen Lodi gekommen? So heißt doch kein Mäderl. Vielleicht Lotti?«

Hans: »O nein, Lodi. Ich weiß nicht, aber ein schöner Name ist es doch.«

Ich (schzerzend): »Meinst du vielleicht eine Schokolodi?«

Hans (sollort): »Nein, eine Saffalodi ... weil ich so gern Wurst esse, Salami auch.«

Ich: »Du, sieht eine Saffalodi nicht wie ein Lumpf aus?«

Hans: »Ja!«

Ich: »Wie sieht denn ein Lumpf aus?«

Hans: »Schwarz. Weißt (zeigt auf meine Augenbrauen und Schnurrbart) wie das und das.«

Ich: »Wie noch? Rund wie eine Saffaladi?«

Hans: »Ja.«

Ich: »Wenn du am Topf gesessen bist und ein Lumpf gekommen ist, hast du dir gedacht, daß du ein Kind bekommen?«

Hans (lachend): »Ja, in der —gasse schon und auch hier.«

Ich: »Weißt du, wie die Stellwagenpferde umgefallen sind? [Vgl. S. 47 ff.] Der Wagen sieht doch wie eine Kinderkiste aus, und wenn das schwarze Pferd umgefallen ist, war es so...«

Hans (ergänzend): »Wie wenn man ein Kind bekommt.«

Ich: »Und was hast du dir gedacht, wie es mit den Füßen Krawall gemacht hat?«

Hans: »Na, wenn ich mich nicht will am Topf setzen und lieber spielen, dann maß' ich so mit den Füßen Krawall.« [Vgl. S. 50.] (Er stampft mit den Füßen auf.)

8 Saffaladi = Zervelatwurst. Meine Frau erzählt gern, daß ihre Tante immer Soffilodi sagt, das mag er gehört haben. [Anmerkung des Vaters.]
This was why he was so much interested in the question whether people liked or did not like having children.

All day long to-day Hans has been playing at loading and unloading packing-cases; he said he wished he could have a toy waggon and boxes of that kind to play with. What used most to interest him in the courtyard of the Customs House opposite was the loading and unloading of the carts. And he used to be frightened most when a cart had been loaded up and was on the point of driving off. "The horses'll fall down," he used to say [p. 46]. He used to call the doors of the Head Customs House shed "holes" (e.g. the first hole, second hole, third hole, etc.). But now, instead of "hole", he says "behind-hole".

The anxiety has almost completely disappeared, except that he likes to remain in the neighbourhood of the house, so as to have a line of retreat in case he is frightened. But he never takes flight into the house now, but stops in the street all the time. As we know, his illness began with his turning back in tears while he was out for a walk; and when he was obliged to go for a second walk he only went as far as the Hauptzollamt station on the Stadtbahn, from which our house can still be seen. At the time of my wife's confinement he was of course kept away from her; and his present anxiety, which prevents him from leaving the neighbourhood of the house, is in reality the longing for her which he felt then.

April 30th. Seeing Hans playing with his imaginary children again, "Hallo," I said to him, "are your children still alive? You know quite well a boy can't have any children."

"Hans: "I know. I was their Mummy before, now I'm their Daddy."

Do we not use the word 'niederkommen' [literally, 'to come down'] when a woman is delivered?
'I: "And who's the children's Mummy?"
'Hans: "Why, Mummy, and you're their Grandaddy."
'I: "So then you'd like to be as big as me, and be married to Mummy, and then you'd like her to have children."
'Hans: "Yes, that's what I'd like, and then my Lainz Grandmummy" (my mother) "will be their Grannie."

Things were moving towards a satisfactory conclusion. The little Oedipus had found a happier solution than that prescribed by destiny. Instead of putting his father out of the way, he had granted him the same happiness that he desired himself: he made him a grandfather and married him to his own mother too.

On May 1st Hans came to me at lunch-time and said: "D'you know what? Let's write something down for the Professor."
'I: "Well, and what shall it be?"
'Hans: "This morning I was in the W.C. with all my children. First I did lump and widdled, and they looked on. Then I put them on the seat and they widdled and did lump, and I wiped their behinds with paper. D'you know why? Because I'd so much like to have children; then I'd do everything for them—take them to the W.C., clean their behinds, and do everything one does with children."

After the admission afforded by this phantasy, it will scarcely be possible to dispute the fact that in Hans's mind there was pleasure attached to the excretory functions.

In the afternoon he ventured into the Stadtpark for the first time. As it is the First of May, no doubt there was less traffic than usual, but still quite enough to have frightened him up to now. He was very proud of his achievement, and after tea I was obliged to go with him to the Stadtpark once again. On the way we met a bus; Hans pointed it out to me, saying: "Look! a stork-box cart!" If he goes with me to the

Ich: »Und wer ist die Mammi zu den Kindern?«
Hans: »No, die Mammi, und du bist der Großvatti.«
Ich: »Also du möchtest so groß sein wie ich, mit der Mammi verheiratet sein, und sie soll dann Kinder bekommen.«

Hans: »Ja, das möch' ich und die Lainzerin (meine Mutter) ist dann die Großmammi.«

Es geht alles gut aus. Der kleine Odipus hat eine glücklichere Lösung gefunden, als vom Schicksal vorgeschrieben ist. Er gönn' seinem Vater, anstatt ihn zu beseitigen, dasselbe Glück, das er für sich verlangt; er ernenn' ihn zum Großvater und verheiratet auch ihn mit der eigenen Mutter.

Am 1. Mai kommt Hans mittags zu mir und sagt: »Weißt was? Schreiben wir was für den Professor auf.«
Ich: »Was denn?«


Es wird nach dem Geständnisse dieser Phantasie wohl kaum angehen, die an die exkrementellen Funktionen geknüpfte Lust bei Hans in Abrede zu stellen.

Nachmittags wagt er sich zum erstenmal in den Stadtpark. Da es 1. Mai ist, fahren wohl weniger Wagen als sonst, immerhin genug, die ihn bisher abgeschreckt haben. Er ist sehr stolz auf seine Leistung, und ich muß mit ihm noch der Jause noch einmal in den Stadtpark gehen. Auf dem Wege treffen wir einen Stellwagen, den er mir zeigt: »Schau, einen Storchenkistenwagen!« Wenn er, wie geplant, mor-
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

Stadtpark again to-morrow, as we have planned, we shall really be able to regard his illness as cured.

'On May 2nd Hans came to me in the morning. "I say," he said, "I thought something to-day." At first he had forgotten it; but later on he related what follows, though with signs of considerable resistance: "The plumber came; and first he took away my behind with a pair of pincers, and then gave me another, and then the same with my widdler. He said: 'Let me see your behind!' and I had to turn round, and he took it away; and then he said: 'Let me see your widdler!'"

Hans's father grasped the nature of this wishful phantasy, and did not hesitate a moment as to the only interpretation it could bear.

'/: "He gave you a bigger widdler and a bigger behind."

'Hans: "Yes."

'/: "Like Daddy's; because you'd like to be Daddy."

'Hans: "Yes, and I'd like to have a moustache like yours and hairs like yours." (He pointed to the hairs on my chest.)

In the light of this, we may review the interpretation of Hans's earlier phantasy to the effect that the plumber had come and unscrewed the bath and had stuck a borer into his stomach [p. 65]. The big bath meant a "behind", the borer or screwdriver was (as was explained at the time) a widdler. The two phantasies are identical. Moreover, a new interpretation of the word 'borer' ['Bohrer'] was not chosen without regard for its connection with 'born' ['geboren'] and 'birth' ['Geburt']. If so, the child could have made no distinction between 'bored' ['gebohrt'] and 'born' ['geboren']. I accept this suggestion, made by an experienced fellow-worker, but I am not in a position to say whether we have before us here a deep and universal connection between the two ideas or merely the employment of a verbal coincidence peculiar to German [and English]. Prometheus (Pramantha), the creator of man, is also etymologically 'the borer'. (Cf. Abraham, *Traum und Mythos*, 1909.)
light is thrown upon Hans's fear of the big bath. (This, by the way, has already diminished.) He dislikes his "behind" being too small for the big bath.

In the course of the next few days Hans's mother wrote to me more than once to express her joy at the little boy's recovery.

A week later came a postscript from Hans's father.

"My dear Professor, I should like to make the following additions to Hans's case history:

1. The remission after he had been given his first piece of enlightenment was not so complete as I may have represented it [pp. 28-9]. It is true that Hans went for walks; but only under compulsion and in a state of great anxiety. Once he went with me as far as the Hauptzollamt station, from which our house can still be seen, but could not be induced to go any farther.

2. As regards "raspberry syrup" and "a gun for shooting with" [p. 38]. Hans is given raspberry syrup when he is constipated. He also frequently confuses the words "shooting" and "shitting". 1

3. Hans was about four years old when he was moved out of our bedroom into a room of his own.

4. A trace of his disorder still persists, though it is no longer in the shape of fear but only in that of the normal instinct for asking questions. The questions are mostly concerned with what things are made of (trams, machines, etc.), who makes things, etc. Most of his questions are characterized by the fact that Hans asks them although he has already answered them himself. He only wants to make sure. Once when he had tired me out with his questions and I had said to him: "Do you think I can answer every question you ask?" he replied: "Well, I thought as you knew that about the horse you'd know this too."

1 [In German 'schießen' and 'schießen'.]
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

5. Hans only refers to his illness now as a matter of past history—"at the time when I had my nonsense".

6. An unsolved residue remains behind; for Hans keeps cudgelling his brains to discover what a father has to do with his child, since it is the mother who brings it into the world. This can be seen from his questions, as, for instance: "I belong to you, too, don't I?" (meaning, not only to his mother). It is not clear to him in what way he belongs to me. On the other hand, I have no direct evidence of his having, as you suppose, overheard his parents in the act of intercourse.

7. In presenting the case one ought perhaps to insist upon the violence of his anxiety. Otherwise it might be said that the boy would have gone out for walks soon enough if he had been given a sound thrashing.

In conclusion let me add these words. With Hans's last phantasy the anxiety which arose from his castration complex was also overcome, and his painful expectations were given a happier turn. Yes, the Doctor [see pp. 7-8] (the plumber) did come, he did take away his penis,—but only to give him a bigger one in exchange for it. For the rest, our young investigator has merely come somewhat early upon the discovery that all knowledge is patchwork, and that each step forward leaves an unsolved residue behind.

Analysie der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

5. Von der Krankheit spricht Hans nur mehr historisch: »Damals, wie ich die Dummheit gehabt hab'.«

6. Der ungelöste Rest ist der, daß Hans sich den Kopf zerbricht, was der Vater mit dem Kind zu tun hat, da doch die Mutter das Kind zur Welt bringt. Man kann das aus den Fragen schließen, wie: »Nicht wahr, ich gehör' auch dir.« (Er meint, nicht nur der Mutter.) Das: wieso er mir gehört, ist ihm nicht klar. Dagegen habe ich keinen direkten Beweis, daß er, wie Sie meinen, einen Koitus der Eltern belauscht hätte.

7. Bei einer Darstellung müßte vielleicht doch auf die Heftigkeit der Angst aufmerksam gemacht werden, da man sonst sagen würde: »Hätte man ihn nur ordentlich durchgeprügelt, so wäre er schon spazierengegangen.«

Ich setze abschließend hinzu: Mit der letzten Phantasie Hanses war auch die vom Kastrationskomplexe stammende Angst überwunden, die peinliche Erwartung ins Begrüßende gewandelt. Ja, der Arzt [s. oben, S. 15], Installateur usw. kommt, er nimmt den Penis ab, aber nur um einen größeren dafür zu geben. Im übrigen mag unser kleiner Forscher nur frühzeitig die Erfahrung machen, daß alles Wissen Stückwerk ist und daß auf jeder Stufe ein ungelöster Rest bleibt.
III

DISCUSSION

I shall now proceed to examine this observation of the development and resolution of a phobia in a boy under five years of age, and I shall have to do so from three points of view. In the first place I shall consider how far it supports the assertions which I put forward in my *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality* (1905d). Secondly, I shall consider to what extent it can contribute towards our understanding of this very frequent form of disorder. And thirdly, I shall consider whether it can be made to shed any light upon the mental life of children or to afford any criticism of our educational aims.

My impression is that the picture of a child's sexual life presented in this observation of little Hans agrees very well with the account I gave of it (basing my views upon psychoanalytic examinations of adults) in my *Three Essays*. But before going into the details of this agreement I must deal with two objections which will be raised against my making use of the present analysis for this purpose. The first objection is to the effect that Hans was not a normal child, but (as events—the illness itself, in fact—showed) had a predisposition to neurosis, and was a young 'degenerate'; it would be illegitimate, therefore, to apply to other, normal children conclusions which might perhaps be true of him. I shall postpone consideration of this objection, since it only limits the value of the observation, and does not completely nullify it. According to the second and more uncompromising objection, an analysis of a child conducted by his father, who went

1

III

EPIKRUISE

Nach drei Richtungen werde ich nun diese Beobachtung von der Entwicklung und Lösung einer Phobie bei einem noch nicht fünfjährigen Knaben zu prüfen haben: erstens, inwieweit sie die Behauptung unterstützt, die ich in den *Drei Abhandlungen zur Sexualtheorie, (1905 d)*, aufgestellt habe; zweitens, was sie zum Verständnis der so häufigen Krankheitsform zu leisten vermög; drittens, was sich ihr etwa zur Aufklärung des kindlichen Seelenlebens und zur Kritik unserer Erziehungsabsichten abgewinnen läßt.

Mein Eindruck geht dahin, daß das Bild des kindlichen Sexuallebens, wie es aus der Beobachtung des kleinen Hans hervortritt, in sehr guter Übereinstimmung mit der Schilderung steht, die ich in meiner *Sexualtheorie* nach psychoanalytischen Untersuchungen an Erwachsenen entworfen habe. Aber ehe ich daran gehe, die Einzelheiten dieser Übereinstimmung zu verfolgen, werde ich zwei Einwendungen erledigen müssen, welche sich gegen die Verwertung dieser Analyse erheben. Die erste lautet: Der kleine Hans sei kein normales Kind, sondern, wie die Folge, eben die Erkrankung, lehrt, ein zur Neurose disponiertes, ein kleiner »Hereditarius«, und es sei darum unstatthaft, Schlüsse, die vielleicht für ihn Geltung haben, auf andere, normale Kinder zu übertragen. Ich werde diesen Einwand, daß er den Wert der Beobachtung bloß einschränkt, nicht völlig aufhebt, später berücksichtigen. Der zweite und strengere Einspruch wird behaupten, daß die Analyse eines Kindes durch seinen Vater, der,
to work instilled with my theoretical views and infected with my prejudices, must be entirely devoid of any objective worth. A child, it will be said, is necessarily highly suggestible, and in regard to no one, perhaps, more than to his own father; he will allow anything to be forced upon him, out of gratitude to his father for taking so much notice of him; none of his assertions can have any evidential value, and everything he produces in the way of associations, phantasies, and dreams will naturally take the direction into which they are being urged by every possible means. Once more, in short, the whole thing is simply 'suggestion'—the only difference being that in the case of a child it can be unmasked much more easily than in that of an adult.

A singular thing. I can remember, when I first began to meddle in the conflict of scientific opinions twenty-two years ago, with what derision the older generation of neurologists and psychiatrists of those days received assertions about suggestion and its effects. Since then the situation has fundamentally changed. The former aversion has been converted into an only too ready acceptance; and this has happened not only as a consequence of the impression which the work of Liebeault and Bernheim and their pupils could not fail to create in the course of these two decades, but also because it has since been discovered how great an economy of thought can be effected by the use of the catchword 'suggestion'. Nobody knows and nobody cares what suggestion is, where it comes from, or when it arises,—it is enough that everything awkward in the region of psychology can be labelled 'suggestion'.

I do not share the view which is at present fashionable that assertions made by children are invariably arbitrary and untrustworthy. The arbitrary has no existence in mental life. The untrustworthiness of the assertions of children is due to the predominance of their imagination, just as the untrust-

1 [Cf. Freud's preface to his translation of Bernheim's book De la suggestion (Freud, 1888–9).]
worthiness of the assertions of grown-up people is due to the predominance of their prejudices. For the rest, even children do not lie without a reason, and on the whole they are more inclined to a love of truth than are their elders. If we were to reject little Hans's statements root and branch we should certainly be doing him a grave injustice. On the contrary, we can quite clearly distinguish from one another the occasions on which he was falsifying the facts or keeping them back under the compelling force of a resistance, the occasions on which, being undecided himself, he agreed with his father (so that what he said must not be taken as evidence), and the occasions on which, freed from every pressure, he burst into a flood of information about what was really going on inside him and about things which until then nobody but himself had known. Statements made by adults offer no greater certainty. It is a regrettable fact that no account of a psychoanalytic case can reproduce the impressions received by the analyst as he conducts it, and that a final sense of conviction can never be obtained by reading about it but only from directly experiencing it. But this disability attaches in an equal degree to analyses of adults.

Little Hans is described by his parents as a cheerful, straightforward child, and so he should have been, considering the education given him by his parents, which consisted essentially in the omission of our usual educational sins. So long as he was able to carry on his researches in a state of happy naiveté, without a suspicion of the conflicts which were soon to arise out of them, he kept nothing back; and the observations made during the period before the phobia admit of no doubt or demur. It was with the outbreak of the illness and during the analysis that discrepancies began to make their appearance between what he said and what he thought; and this was partly because unconscious material, which he was unable to master all at once, was forcing itself upon him, and partly because the content of his thoughts provoked
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

reservations on account of his relation to his parents. It is my unbiased opinion that these difficulties, too, turned out no greater than in many analyses of adults.

It is true that during the analysis Hans had to be told many things that he could not say himself, that he had to be presented with thoughts which he had so far shown no signs of possessing, and that his attention had to be turned in the direction from which his father was expecting something to come. This detracts from the evidential value of the analysis; but the procedure is the same in every case. For a psycho-analysis is not an impartial scientific investigation, but a therapeutic measure. Its essence is not to prove anything, but merely to alter something. In a psycho-analysis the physician always gives his patient (sometimes to a greater and sometimes to a less extent) the conscious anticipatory ideas by the help of which he is put in a position to recognize and to grasp the unconscious material. For there are some patients who need more of such assistance and some who need less; but there are none who get through without some of it. Slight disorders may perhaps be brought to an end by the subject's unaided efforts, but never a neurosis—a thing which has set itself up against the ego as an element alien to it. To get the better of such an element another person must be brought in, and in so far as that other person can be of assistance the neurosis will be curable. If it is in the very nature of any neurosis to turn away from the 'other person'—and this seems to be one of the characteristics of the states grouped together under the name of dementia praecox—then for that very reason such a state will be incurable by any efforts of ours. It is true that a child, on account of the small development of his intellectual systems, requires especially energetic assistance. But, after all, the information which the physician gives his patient is itself derived in its turn from analytical experience; and indeed it is sufficiently convincing if, at the cost of this intervention by the physician, we are


Während der Analyse allerdings muß ihm vieles gesagt werden, was er selbst nicht zu sagen weiß, müssen ihm Gedanken eingegeben werden, von denen sich noch nichts bei ihm gezeigt hat, muß seine Aufmerksamkeit die Einstellung nach jenen Richtungen erfahren, von denen her der Vater das Kommande erwartet. Das schwächt die Beweiskraft der Analyse; aber in jeder verfährt man so. Eine Psychoanalyse ist eben keine tendenzlose, wissenschaftliche Untersuchung, sondern ein therapeutischer Eingriff; sie will an sich nichts beweisen, sondern nur etwas ändern. Jedesmal gibt der Arzt in der Psychoanalyse dem Patienten die bewußten Erwartungsvorstellungen, mit deren Hilfe er instande sein soll, das Unbewußte zu erkennen und zu erfassen, das eine Mal in reichlicherem, das andere in bescheidenerem Ausmaße.

Es gibt eben Fälle, die mehr, und andere, die weniger Nachhilfe brauchen. Ohne solche Hilfe kommt niemand aus. Was man etwa bei sich allein zu Ende bringen kann, sind leichte Störungen, niemals eine Neurose, die sich dem Ich wie etwas Fremdes entgegengestellt hat; zur Bewältigung einer solchen braucht es den andern, und soweit der andere helfen kann, soweit ist die Neurose heilbar.

Wenn es im Wesen einer Neurose liegt, sich vom »anderen« abzuwenden, wie es die Charakteristik der als Dementia praecox zusammengefaßten Zustände zu enthalten scheint, so sind eben darum diese Zustände für unsere Bemühung unheilbar. Es ist nun zu geben, daß das Kind wegen der geringen Entwicklung seiner intellektuellen Systeme einer besonders intensiven Nachhilfe bedarf. Aber was der Arzt dem Patienten mitteilt, stammt doch selbst wieder aus analytischen Erfahrungen, und es ist wirklich beweisend genug, wenn mit dem Aufwande dieser ärztlichen Einmengung
enabled to discover the structure of the pathogenic material and simultaneously to dissipate it.

And yet, even during the analysis, the small patient gave evidence of enough independence to acquit him upon the charge of 'suggestion'. Like all other children, he applied his childish sexual theories to the material before him without having received any encouragement to do so. These theories are extremely remote from the adult mind. Indeed, in this instance I actually omitted to warn Hans's father that the boy would be bound to approach the subject of childbirth by way of the excretory complex. This negligence on my part, though it led to an obscure phase in the analysis, was nevertheless the means of producing a good piece of evidence of the genuineness and independence of Hans's mental processes. He suddenly became occupied with 'lumpf' [p. 54 ff.], without his father, who is supposed to have been practising suggestion upon him, having the least idea how he had arrived at that subject or what was going to come of it. Nor can his father be saddled with any responsibility for the production of the two plumber phantasies [pp. 65 and 98], which arose out of Hans's early acquired 'castration complex'. And I must here confess that, out of theoretical interest, I entirely concealed from Hans's father my expectation that there would turn out to be some such connection, so as not to interfere with the value of a piece of evidence such as does not often come within one's grasp.

If I went more deeply into the details of the analysis I could produce plenty more evidence of Hans's independence of 'suggestion'; but I shall break off the discussion of this preliminary objection at this point. I am aware that even with this analysis I shall not succeed in convincing any one who will not let himself be convinced, and I shall proceed with my discussion of the case for the benefit of those readers who are already convinced of the objective reality of unconscious pathogenic material. And I do this with the agreeable
assurance that the number of such readers is steadily increasing.

The first trait in little Hans which can be regarded as part of his sexual life was a quite peculiarly lively interest in his 'widdler'—an organ deriving its name from that one of its two functions which, scarcely the less important of the two, is not to be eluded in the nursery. This interest aroused in him the spirit of enquiry, and he thus discovered that the presence or absence of a widdler made it possible to differentiate between animate and inanimate objects [p. 9]. He assumed that all animate objects were like himself, and possessed this important bodily organ; he observed that it was present in the larger animals, suspected that this was so too in both his parents, and was not deterred by the evidence of his own eyes from authenticating the fact in his new-born sister [p. 11]. One might almost say that it would have been too shattering a blow to his 'Weltanschauung' if he had had to make up his mind to forgo the presence of this organ in a being similar to him; it would have been as though it were being torn away from himself. It was probably on this account that a threat of his mother's [pp. 7–8], which was concerned precisely with the loss of his widdler, was hastily dismissed from his thoughts and only succeeded in making its effects apparent at a later period. The reason for his mother's intervention had been that he used to like giving himself feelings of pleasure by touching his member: the little boy had begun to practise the commonest—and most normal—form of auto-erotic sexual activity.

The pleasure which a person takes in his own sexual organ may become associated with scopophilia (or sexual pleasure in looking) in its active and passive forms, in a manner which has been very aptly described by Alfred Adler (1908) as 'confluence of instincts'. So little Hans began to try to get a sight of other people's widdlers; his sexual curiosity developed, and...
at the same time he liked to exhibit his own widdler. One of his dreams, dating from the beginning of his period of repression, expressed a wish that one of his little girl friends should assist him in widdling, that is, that she should share the spectacle [p. 19]. The dream shows, therefore, that up till then this wish had subsisted unpressed, and later information confirmed the fact that he had been in the habit of gratifying it. The active side of his sexual scopophilia soon became associated in him with a definite theme. He repeatedly expressed both to his father and his mother his regret that he had never yet seen their widdlers; and it was probably the need for making a comparison which impelled him to do this. The ego is always the standard by which one measures the external world; one learns to understand it by means of a constant comparison with oneself. Hans had observed that large animals had widdlers that were correspondingly larger than his; he consequently suspected that the same was true of his parents, and was anxious to make sure of this. His mother, he thought, must certainly have a widdler 'like a horse'. He was then prepared with the comforting reflection that his widdler would grow with him. It was as though the child's wish to be bigger had been concentrated on his genitals.

Thus in little Hans's sexual constitution the genital zone was from the outset the one among his erogenous zones which afforded him the most intense pleasure. The only other similar pleasure of which he gave evidence was excretory pleasure, the pleasure attached to the orifices through which micturition and evacuation of the bowels are effected. In his final phantasy of bliss, with which his illness was overcome, he imagined he had children, whom he took to the W.C., whom he made to widdle, whose behinds he wiped—for whom, in short, he did 'everything one can do with children' [p. 97]; it therefore seems impossible to avoid the assumption that during the period when he himself had been looked
after as an infant these same performances had been the source of pleasurable sensations for him. He had obtained this pleasure from his erogenous zones with the help of the person who had looked after him—his mother, in fact; and thus the pleasure already pointed the way to object-choice. But it is just possible that at a still earlier date he had been in the habit of giving himself this pleasure auto-erotically—that he had been one of those children who like retaining their excreta till they can derive a voluptuous sensation from their evacuation. I say no more than that it is possible, because the matter was not cleared up in the analysis; the 'making a row with the legs' (kicking about), of which he was so much frightened later on, points in that direction. But in any case these sources of pleasure had no particularly striking importance with Hans, as they so often have with other children. He early became clean in his habits, and neither bed-wetting nor diurnal incontinence played any part during his first years; no trace was observed in him of any inclination to play with his excrement, a propensity which is so revolting in adults, and which commonly makes its reappearance at the termination of processes of psychical involution.

At this juncture it is as well to emphasize at once the fact that during his phobia there was an unmistakable repression of these two well-developed components of his sexual activity. He was ashamed of micturating before other people, accused himself of putting his finger to his widdler, made efforts to give up masturbating, and showed disgust at 'lump' and 'widdle' and everything that reminded him of them. In his phantasy of looking after his children he undid this latter repression.

A sexual constitution like that of little Hans does not appear to carry with it a predisposition to the development either of perversions or of their negative (we will limit ourselves to a consideration of hysteria).1 As far as my experience goes (and

1 [See the paragraphs on 'Neurosis and Perversion' at the end of Section 4 of the first of Freud's Three Essays (1905d; Standard Ed., 7, 165).]
there is still a real need for speaking with caution on this point) the innate constitution of hysterics—that this is also true of perverts is almost self-evident—is marked by the genital zone being relatively less prominent than the other erotogenic zones. But we must expressly except from this rule one particular "aberration" of sexual life. In those who later become homosexuals we meet with the same predominance in infancy of the genital zone (and especially of the penis) as in normal persons. Indeed it is the high esteem felt by the homosexual for the male organ which decides his fate. In his childhood he chooses women as his sexual object, so long as he assumes that they too possess what in his eyes is an indispensable part of the body; when he becomes convinced that women have deceived him in this particular, they cease to be acceptable to him as a sexual object. He cannot forgo a penis in any one who is to attract him to sexual intercourse; and if circumstances are favourable he will fix his libido upon the 'woman with a penis', a youth of feminine appearance. Homosexuals, then, are persons who, owing to the erotogenic importance of their own genitals, cannot do without a similar feature in their sexual object. In the course of their development from auto-erotism to object-love, they have remained at a point of fixation between the two.

There is absolutely no justification for distinguishing a special homosexual instinct. What constitutes a homosexual is a peculiarity not in his instinctual life but in his choice of sexual object. He cannot forgo a penis in any one who is to attract him to sexual intercourse; and if circumstances are favourable he will fix his libido upon the 'woman with a penis', a youth of feminine appearance. Homosexuals, then, are persons who, owing to the erotogenic importance of their own genitals, cannot do without a similar feature in their sexual object. In the course of their development from auto-erotism to object-love, they have remained at a point of fixation between the two.

1 As my expectations led me to suppose, and as Sadger's observations [e.g. 1908 and 1909] have shown, all such people pass through an amphigenic phase in childhood.

2 [The 'woman with a penis' had been previously mentioned in Freud's paper on 'The Sexual Theories of Children' (1908c). For a summary of his views on male homosexuality see the paragraph on the 'Sexual Object of Inverts' in Section I (A) of the first of the Three Essays (1905d), and especially the long footnote added in the course of the successive editions of that book (Standard Ed., 7, 144-7).]
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

an object. Let me recall what I have said in my Three Essays to the effect that we have mistakenly imagined the bond between instinct and object in sexual life as being more intimate than it really is.1 A homosexual may have normal instincts, but he is unable to disengage them from a class of objects defined by a particular determinant. And in his childhood, since at that period this determinant is taken for granted as being of universal application, he is able to behave like little Hans, who showed his affection to little boys and girls indiscriminately, and once described his friend Fritzl as 'the girl he was fondest of' [p. 16]. Hans was a homosexual (as all children may very well be), quite consistently with the fact, which must always be kept in mind, that he was acquainted with only one kind of genital organ—a genital organ like his own.2

In his subsequent development, however, it was not to homosexuality that our young libertine proceeded, but to an energetic masculinity with traits of polygamy; he knew how to vary his behaviour, too, with his varying feminine objects—audaciously aggressive in one case, languishing and bashful in another. His affection had moved from his mother on to other objects of love, but at a time when there was a scarcity of these it returned to her, only to break down in a neurosis. It was not until this happened that it became evident to what a pitch of intensity his love for his mother had developed and through what vicissitudes it had passed. The sexual aim which he pursued with his girl playmates, of sleeping with them, had originated in relation to his mother. It was expressed in words which might be retained in maturity,

1 [Freud, 1905d, Standard Ed., 7, 147-8.]
2 (Footnote added 1923:) I have subsequently (1923e) drawn attention to the fact that the period of sexual development which our little patient was passing through is universally characterized by acquaintance with only one sort of genital organ, namely, the male one. In contrast to the later period of maturity, this period is marked not by a genital primacy but by a primacy of the phallus.
though they would then bear a richer connotation. The boy had found his way to object-love in the usual manner from the care he had received when he was an infant; and a new pleasure had now become the most important for him—that of sleeping beside his mother. I should like to emphasize the importance of pleasure derived from cutaneous contact as a component in this new aim of Hans's, which, according to the nomenclature (artificial to my mind) of Moll, would have to be described as satisfaction of the instinct of contraaction.

In his attitude towards his father and mother Hans confirms in the most concrete and uncompromising manner what I have said in my *Interpretation of Dreams* [1900a, in Section D (β) of Chapter V; *Standard Ed.*, 4, 248 ff.] and in my *Three Essays* [1905d, *Standard Ed.*, 7, 222 ff.] with regard to the sexual relations of a child to his parents. Hans really was a little Oedipus who wanted to have his father 'out of the way', to get rid of him, so that he might be alone with his beautiful mother and sleep with her. This wish had originated during his summer holidays, when the alternating presence and absence of his father had drawn Hans's attention to the condition upon which depended the intimacy with his mother which he longed for. At that time the form taken by the wish had been merely that his father should 'go away'; and at a later stage it became possible for his fear of being bitten by a white horse to attach itself directly on to this form of the wish, owing to a chance impression which he received at the moment of some one else's departure. But

---

1 [The German 'bei jemanden schlafen', literally 'to sleep with some one', is used (like the English 'to lie with') in the sense of 'to copulate with'.]  
2 [In the editions before 1924 this read 'at the moment of the departure of another father'. The original account of the episode on p. 29 (as also the reference to it on p. 45) seemed, however, to imply that it was only Lizzi who was going away. Hence the correction and the similar one on p. 119.]

---

In seinen Verhältnissen zu Vater und Mutter bestätigt Hans aufs grellste und greifbarste alles, was ich in der *Traumdeutung* und in der *Sexual-theorie* über die Sexualbeziehungen der Kinder zu den Eltern behauptet habe. Er ist wirklich ein kleiner Odipus, der den Vater »weg«, beseitigt haben möchte, um mit der schönen Mutter allein zu sein, bei ihr zu schlafen.

Dieser Wunsch entstand im Sommeraufenthale, als die Abwechslungen von Anwesenheit und Abwesenheit des Vaters ihn auf die Bedingung hinwiesen, an welche die ersehnte Intimität mit der Mutter gebunden war. Er begnügte sich damals mit der Fassung, der Vater solle »wegfahren«, an welche später die Angst, von einem weißen Pferde gebissen zu werden, unmittelbar anknüpfen konnte, dank einem akzidentellen Eindrucke bei einer anderen Abreise. Er erhob sich später, w

---

1 [Vgl. Moll, 1898.]  
2 [1900a, in Kapitel V, Abschnitt D (β); 1905d, Dritte Abhandlung, in der Passage über das »Sexualobjekt der Säuglingszeit« innerhalb des Abschnittes »Die Objektfundung«.]  
3 [In den Ausgaben vor 1924 heißt es »beim Wegfahren eines andern Vaters«. Die ursprüngliche Darstellung dieser Episode auf S. 31 (wie auch die Bezugsnahme darauf, S. 44), scheint indessen zu besagen, daß doch nur Lizzi fortging. Daher die Richtigstellung hier und entsprechend auf S. 102.]
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

subsequently (probably not until they had moved back to Vienna, where his father's absences were no longer to be reckoned on) the wish had taken the form that his father should be permanently away—that he should be 'dead'. The fear which sprang from this death-wish against his father, and which may thus be said to have had a normal motive, formed the chief obstacle to the analysis until it was removed during the conversation in my consulting-room [p. 42].

But Hans was not by any means a bad character; he was not even one of those children who at his age still give free play to the propensity towards cruelty and violence which is a constituent of human nature. On the contrary, he had an unusually kind-hearted and affectionate disposition; his father reported that the transformation of aggressive tendencies into feelings of pity took place in him at a very early age. Long before the phobia he had become uneasy when he saw the horses in a merry-go-round being beaten; and he was never unmoved if any one wept in his presence. At one stage in the analysis a piece of suppressed sadism made its appearance in a particular context; but it was suppressed sadism, and we shall presently have to discover from the context what it stood for and what it was meant to replace. And Hans deeply loved the father against whom he cherished these death-wishes; and while his intellect demurred to such a contradiction, he could not help demonstrating the fact of its existence, by hitting his father and immediately afterwards kissing the place he had hit [p. 42 n.]

1 It is quite certain that Hans's two associations, 'raspberry-syrup' and 'a gun for shooting people dead with' [p. 38], must have had more than one set of determinants. They probably had just as much to do with his hatred of his father as with his constipation complex. His father, who himself guessed the latter connection [p. 99], also suggested that 'raspberry syrup' might be related to 'blood'.

2 His wanting to beat and tease horses [p. 79].

3 See the critical question he addressed to his father (p. 44).
We ourselves, too, must guard against making a difficulty of such a contradiction. The emotional life of man is in general made up of pairs of contraries such as these. Indeed, if it were not so, repressions and neuroses would perhaps never come about. In the adult these pairs of contrary emotions do not as a rule become simultaneously conscious except at the climaxes of passionate love; at other times they usually go on suppressing each other until one of them succeeds in keeping the other altogether out of sight. But in children they can exist peaceably side by side for quite a considerable time.

The most important influence upon the course of Hans's psychosexual development was the birth of a baby sister when he was three and a half years old. That event accentuated his relations to his parents and gave him some insoluble problems to think about; and later, as he watched the way in which the infant was looked after, the memory-traces of his own earliest experiences of pleasure were revived in him. This influence, too, is a typical one: in an unexpectedly large number of life-histories, normal as well as pathological, we find ourselves obliged to take as our starting-point an outburst of sexual pleasure and sexual curiosity connected, like this one, with the birth of the next child. Hans's behaviour towards the new arrival was just what I have described in The Interpretation of Dreams [1900a, in Section D (β) of Chapter V; Standard Ed., 4, 250 f.]. In his fever a few days later he betrayed how little he liked the addition to the family [p. 11]. Affection for his sister might come later, but his first attitude...
was hostility. From that time forward fear that yet another baby might arrive found a place among his conscious thoughts. In the neurosis, his hostility, already suppressed, was represented by a special fear—a fear of the bath [p. 66]. In the analysis he gave undisguised expression to his death-wish against his sister, and was not content with allusions which required supplementing by his father. His inner conscience did not consider this wish so wicked as the analogous one against his father; but it is clear that in his unconscious he treated both persons in the same way, because they both took his mummy away from him, and interfered with his being alone with her.

Moreover, this event and the feelings that were revived by it gave a new direction to his wishes. In his triumphant final phantasy [pp. 96–7] he summed up all of his erotic wishes, both those derived from his auto-erotic phase and those connected with his object-love. In that phantasy he was married to his beautiful mother and had innumerable children whom he could look after in his own way.

(ii)

One day while Hans was in the street he was seized with an attack of anxiety. He could not yet say what it was he was afraid of; but at the very beginning of this anxiety-state he betrayed to his father his motive for being ill, the advantage he derived from it. He wanted to stay with his mother and to coax with her; his recollection that he had also been separated from her at the time of the baby's birth may also, as his father suggests [p. 96], have contributed to his longing. It soon became evident that his anxiety was no longer convertible into longing; he was afraid even when his mother went with him. In the meantime indications appeared of what it was to which his libido (now changed into anxiety)

1 [A full discussion of the advantages derived from being ill will be found in Lecture XXIV of Freud's "Introductory Lectures" (1916–17).]
had become attached. He gave expression to the quite specific fear that a white horse would bite him.

Disorders of this kind are called ‘phobias’, and we might classify Hans’s case as an agoraphobia if it were not for the fact that it is a characteristic of that complaint that the locomotion of which the patient is otherwise incapable can always be easily performed when he is accompanied by some specially selected person—in the last resort, by the physician. Hans’s phobia did not fulfil this condition; it soon ceased having any relation to the question of locomotion and became more and more clearly concentrated upon horses. In the early days of his illness, when the anxiety was at its highest pitch, he expressed a fear that ‘the horse’ll come into the room’ [p. 24], and it was this that helped me so much towards understanding his condition.

In the classificatory system of the neuroses no definite position has hitherto been assigned to ‘phobias’. It seems certain that they should only be regarded as syndromes which may form part of various neuroses and that we need not rank them as an independent pathological process. For phobias of the kind to which little Hans’s belongs, and which are in fact the most common, the name of ‘anxiety-hysteria’ seems to me not inappropriate; I suggested the term to Dr. W. Stekel when he was undertaking a description of neurotic anxiety-states,1 and I hope it will come into general use. It finds its justification in the similarity between the psychological structure of these phobias and that of hysteria—a similarity which is complete except upon a single point. That point, however, is a decisive one and well adapted for purposes of differentiation. For in anxiety-hysteria the libido which has been liberated from the pathogenic material by repression is not converted (that is, diverted from the mental sphere into a somatic innervation), but is set free in the shape of anxiety.


1 Nervöse Angstzustände und ihre Behandlung, 1908. [Freud wrote a preface for the first edition of this work (1908)].

* W. Stekel, Nervöse Angstzustände und ihre Behandlung, 1908. [Freud wrote a Vorwort für die erste Auflage dieses Werkes (1908)].
the clinical cases that we meet with, this 'anxiety-hysteria' may be combined with 'conversion-hysteria' in any proportion. There exist cases of pure conversion-hysteria without any trace of anxiety, just as there are cases of simple anxiety-hysteria, which exhibit feelings of anxiety and phobias, but have no admixture of conversion. The case of little Hans is one of the latter sort.

Anxiety-hysterias are the most common of all psycho-neurotic disorders. But, above all, they are those which make their appearance earliest in life; they are *par excellence* the neuroses of childhood. When a mother uses such phrases as that her child's 'nerves' are in a bad state, we can be certain that in nine cases out of ten the child is suffering from some kind of anxiety or from many kinds at once. Unfortunately the finer mechanism of these highly significant disorders has not yet been sufficiently studied. It has not yet been established whether anxiety-hysteria is determined, in contradistinction to conversion-hysteria and other neuroses, solely by constitutional factors or solely by accidental experiences, or by what combination of the two. It seems to me that of all neurotic disorders it is the least dependent upon a special constitutional predisposition and that it is consequently the most easily acquired at any time of life.

One essential characteristic of anxiety-hysterias is very easily pointed out. An anxiety-hysteria tends to develop more and more into a 'phobia'. In the end the patient may have

1 [This word was added in 1924, no doubt in order to clarify the sentence.]

2 (Footnote added 1923:) The question which is raised here has not been pursued further. But there is no reason to suppose that anxiety-hysteria is an exception to the rule that both predisposition and experience must co-operate in the aetiology of a neurosis. Rank's view of the effects of the trauma of birth seems to throw special light upon the predisposition to anxiety-hysteria which is so strong in childhood. [See, however, Freud's later criticism of this view of Rank's in the eighth chapter of *Inhibitions, Symptoms and Anxiety* (1926d).]
DISCUSSION

got rid of all his anxiety, but only at the price of subjecting himself to all kinds of inhibitions and restrictions. From the outset in anxiety-hysteria the mind is constantly at work in the direction of once more psychically binding the anxiety which has become liberated; but this work can neither bring about a retransformation of the anxiety into libido, nor can it establish any contact with the complexes which were the source of the libido. Nothing is left for it but to cut off access to every possible occasion that might lead to the development of anxiety, by erecting mental barriers in the nature of precautions, inhibitions, or prohibitions; and it is these defensive structures that appear to us in the form of phobias and that constitute to our eyes the essence of the disease.

The treatment of anxiety-hysteria may be said hitherto to have been a purely negative one. Experience has shown that it is impossible to effect the cure of a phobia (and even in certain circumstances dangerous to attempt to do so) by violent means, that is, by first depriving the patient of his defences and then putting him in a situation in which he cannot escape the liberation of his anxiety. Consequently, nothing can be done but to leave the patient to look for protection wherever he thinks he may find it; and he is merely regarded with a not very helpful contempt for his 'incomprehensible cowardice'.

Little Hans's parents were determined from the very beginning of his illness that he was neither to be laughed at nor bullied, but that access must be obtained to his repressed wishes by means of psycho-analysis. The extraordinary pains taken by Hans's father were rewarded by success, and his reports will give us an opportunity of penetrating into the fabric of this type of phobia and of following the course of its analysis.

I think it is not unlikely that the extensive and detailed character of the analysis may have made it somewhat obscure

Man darf sagen, daß die Behandlung der Angsthysterie bisher eine rein negative gewesen ist. Die Erfahrung hat gezeigt, daß es unmöglich, ja unter Umständen gefährlich ist, die Heilung der Phobie auf gewalttätige Art zu erreichen, indem man den Kranken in eine Situation bringt, in welcher er die Angstentbindung durchmachen muß, nachdem man ihm seine Deckung entzogen hat. So läßt man ihn notgedrungen Schutz suchen, wo er ihn zu finden glaubt, und bezeugt ihm eine wirkungsvolle Verachtung wegen seiner »unbegreiflichen Feigheit«.


Es ist mir nicht unwahrscheinlich, daß die Analyse durch ihre Ausdehnung und Ausführlichkeit dem Leser einigermaßen undurchsichtig ge-
to the reader. I shall therefore begin by giving a brief résumé of it, in which I shall omit all distracting side-issues and shall draw attention to the results as they came to light one after another.

The first thing we learn is that the outbreak of the anxiety-state was by no means so sudden as appeared at first sight. A few days earlier the child had woken from an anxiety-dream to the effect that his mother had gone away, and that now he had no mother to coax with [p. 23]. This dream alone points to the presence of a repressive process of ominous intensity. We cannot explain it, as we can so many other anxiety-dreams, by supposing that the child had in his dream felt anxiety arising from some somatic cause and had made use of the anxiety for the purpose of fulfilling an unconscious wish which would otherwise have been deeply repressed.1 We must regard it rather as a genuine, punishment and repression dream, and, moreover, as a dream which failed in its function, since the child woke from his sleep in a state of anxiety. We can easily reconstruct what actually occurred in the unconscious. The child dreamt of exchanging endearments with his mother and of sleeping with her; but all the pleasure was transformed into anxiety, and all the ideational content into its opposite. Repression had defeated the purpose of the mechanism of dreaming.

But the beginnings of this psychological situation go back further still. During the preceding summer Hans had had similar moods of mingled longing and apprehension, in which he had said similar things; and at that time they had secured him the advantage of being taken by his mother into her bed. We may assume that since then Hans had been in a state of intensified sexual excitement, the object of which was his mother. The intensity of this excitement was shown by his two attempts [pp. 19 and 23] at seducing his mother (the second of which occurred just before the outbreak of his

1 See my Interpretation of Dreams [1900a; Standard Ed., 4, 236].
DISCUSSION

119

anxiety); and he found an incidental channel of discharge for it by masturbating every evening and in that way obtaining gratification. Whether the sudden change-over of this excitement into anxiety took place spontaneously, or as a result of his mother's rejection of his advances, or owing to the accidental revival of earlier impressions by the 'precipitating cause' of his illness (about which we shall hear presently)—this we cannot decide; and, indeed, it is a matter of indifference, for these three alternative possibilities cannot be regarded as mutually incompatible. The fact remains that his sexual excitement suddenly changed into anxiety.

We have already described the child's behaviour at the beginning of his anxiety, as well as the first content which he assigned to it, namely, that a horse would bite him. It was at this point that the first piece of therapy was interposed. His parents represented to him that his anxiety was the result of masturbation, and encouraged him to break himself of the habit [p. 24]. I took care that when they spoke to him great stress was laid upon his affection for his mother, for that was what he was trying to replace by his fear of horses [p. 28]. This first intervention brought a slight improvement, but the ground was soon lost again during a period of physical illness. Hans's condition remained unchanged. Soon afterwards he traced back his fear of being bitten by a horse to an impression he had received at Gmunden [p. 29]. A father had addressed his child on her departure 1 with these words of warning: 'Don't put your finger to the horse; if you do, it'll bite you.' The words, 'don't put your finger to', which Hans used in reporting this warning, resembled the form of words in which the warning against masturbation had been framed. It seemed at first, therefore, as though Hans's parents were right in supposing that what he was frightened of was his own masturbatory indulgence. But the whole nexus remained

1 [Before 1924 this read: 'A father, on his departure, had addressed his child . .' See footnote, p. 111.]
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

loose, and it seemed to be merely by chance that horses had become his bugbear.

I had expressed a suspicion that Hans's repressed wish might now be that he wanted at all costs to see his mother's widdler. As his behaviour to a new maid fitted in with this hypothesis, his father gave him his first piece of enlightenment, namely, that women have no widdlers [p. 31]. He reacted to this first effort at helping him by producing a phantasy that he had seen his mother showing her widdler.1 This phantasy and a remark made by him in conversation, to the effect that his widdler was 'fixed in, of course', allow us our first glimpse into the patient's unconscious mental processes. The fact was that the threat of castration made to him by his mother some fifteen months earlier [pp. 7-8] was now having a deferred effect upon him. For his phantasy that his mother was doing the same as he had done (the familiar tu quoque repartee of inculpated children) was intended to serve as a piece of self-justification; it was a protective or defensive phantasy. At the same time we must remark that it was Hans's parents who had extracted from the pathogenic material operating in him the particular theme of his interest in widdlers. Hans followed their lead in this matter, but he had not yet taken any line of his own in the analysis. And no therapeutic success was to be observed. The analysis had passed far away from the subject of horses; and the information that women have no widdlers was calculated, if anything, to increase his concern for the preservation of his own widdler.

Therapeutic success, however, is not our primary aim; we endeavour rather to enable the patient to obtain a conscious grasp of his unconscious wishes. And this we can achieve by working upon the basis of the hints he throws out, and so,

1 The context enables us to add: 'and touching it' (p. 32). After all, he himself could not show his widdler without touching it. [This footnote was added in 1924. Previously the word 'touching' appeared in the text instead of 'showing'.]

Analyse der Phobie eines fünfjährigen Knaben

aber noch ein loser und das Pferd scheint zu seiner Schreckensrolle recht zufällig geraten zu sein.


Es ist aber nicht der therapeutische Erfolg, den wir an erster Stelle anstreben, sondern wir wollen den Patienten in den Stand setzen, seine unbewußten Wunschregungen bewußt zu erfassen. Dies erreichen wir, indem wir auf Grund der Andeutungen, die er uns macht, mit Hilfe

DISCUSSION

with the help of our interpretative technique, presenting the unconscious complex to his consciousness in our own words. There will be a certain degree of similarity between that which he hears from us and that which he is looking for, and which, in spite of all resistances, is trying to force its way through to consciousness; and it is this similarity that will enable him to discover the unconscious material. The physician is a step in front of him in knowledge; and the patient follows along his own road, until the two meet at the appointed goal. Beginners in psycho-analysis are apt to assimilate these two events, and to suppose that the moment at which one of the patient's unconscious complexes has become known to them is also the moment at which the patient himself recognizes it. They are expecting too much when they think that they will cure the patient by informing him of this piece of knowledge; for he can do no more with the information than make use of it to help himself in discovering the unconscious complex where it is anchored in his unconscious. 1 A first success of this sort had now been achieved with Hans. Having partly mastered his castration complex, he was now able to communicate his wishes in regard to his mother. He did so, in what was still a distorted form, by means of the phantasy of the two giraffes, one of which was calling out in vain because Hans had taken possession of the other [p. 37]. He represented the 'taking possession of' pictorially as 'sitting down on'. His father recognized the phantasy as a reproduction of a bedroom scene which used to take place in the morning between the boy and his parents; and he quickly stripped the underlying wish of the disguise which it still wore. The boy's father and mother were the two giraffes. The reason for the choice of a giraffe-phantasy for the purposes

1 (The point made here was discussed by Freud at greater length in the last pages of his technical paper 'On Beginning the Treatment' (1913c) and more briefly in his paper on 'wild' analysis (1910k). See also the closing paragraphs of Section II of 'The Unconscious' (1915e).]

S.F. X—1
of disguise was fully explained by a visit that the boy had paid to those same large beasts at Schönbrunn a few days earlier, by the giraffe-drawing, belonging to an earlier period, which had been preserved by his father, and also, perhaps, by an unconscious comparison based upon the giraffe's long, stiff neck.\footnote{Hans's admiration of his father's neck later on would fit in with this. [This is probably a condensation of the episodes on pp. 40 and 53.]} It may be remarked that the giraffe, as being a large animal and interesting on account of its widdler, was a possible competitor with the horse for the role of bugbear; moreover, the fact that both his father and his mother appeared as giraffes offered a hint which had not yet been followed up, as regards the interpretation of the anxiety-horses.

Immediately after the giraffe story Hans produced two minor phantasies: one of his forcing his way into a forbidden space at Schönbrunn, and the other of his smashing a railway-carriage window on the Stadtbahn \[pp. 40-41\]. In each case the punishable nature of the action was emphasized, and in each his father appeared as an accomplice. Unluckily his father failed to interpret either of these phantasies, so that Hans himself gained nothing from telling them. In an analysis, however, a thing which has not been understood inevitably reappears; like an unlaid ghost, it cannot rest until the mystery has been solved and the spell broken.

There are no difficulties in the way of our understanding these two criminal phantasies. They belonged to Hans's complex of taking possession of his mother. Some kind of vague notion was struggling in the child's mind of something that he might do with his mother by means of which his taking possession of her would be consummated; for this elusive thought he found certain pictorial representations, which had in common the qualities of being violent and forbidden, and the content of which strikes us as fitting in most remarkably

\footnote{Dazu stimmt die spätere Bewunderung Hansens für den Hals seines Vaters. [Dazu ist wahrscheinlich eine Verdichtung der Episoden auf S. 39 und 50.]}
well with the hidden truth. We can only say that they were symbolic phantasies of intercourse, and it was no irrelevant detail that his father was represented as sharing in his actions: 'I should like', he seems to have been saying, 'to be doing something with my mother, something forbidden; I do not know what it is, but I do know that you are doing it too.'

The giraffe phantasy strengthened a conviction which had already begun to form in my mind when Hans expressed his fear that 'the horse'll come into the room' [p. 24]; and I thought the right moment had now arrived for informing him that he was afraid of his father because he himself nourished jealous and hostile wishes against him—for it was essential to postulate this much with regard to his unconscious impulses. In telling him this, I had partly interpreted his fear of horses for him: the horse must be his father—whom he had good internal reasons for fearing. Certain details of which Hans had shown he was afraid, the black on horses' mouths and the things in front of their eyes (the moustaches and eyeglasses which are the privilege of a grown-up man), seemed to me to have been directly transposed from his father on to the horses [p. 42].

By enlightening Hans on this subject I had cleared away his most powerful resistance against allowing his unconscious thoughts to be made conscious; for his father was himself acting as his physician. The worst of the attack was now over; there was a plentiful flow of material; the little patient summoned up courage to describe the details of his phobia, and soon began to take an active share in the conduct of the analysis.¹

¹ Even in analyses in which the physician and the patient are strangers, fear of the father plays one of the most important parts as a resistance against the reproduction of the unconscious pathogenic material. Resistances are sometimes in the nature of [stereotyped] 'motifs'. But sometimes, as in the present instance, one piece of the unconscious material is capable from its actual content of operating as an inhibition against the reproduction of another piece. [These


A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

It was only then that we learnt what the objects and impressions were of which Hans was afraid. He was not only afraid of horses biting him—he was soon silent upon that point—but also of carts, of furniture-vans, and of buses (their common quality being, as presently became clear, that they were all heavily loaded), of horses that started moving, of horses that looked big and heavy, and of horses that drove quickly. The meaning of these specifications was explained by Hans himself: he was afraid of horses falling down, and consequently incorporated in his phobia everything that seemed likely to facilitate their falling down [pp. 46-7].

It not at all infrequently happens that it is only after doing a certain amount of psycho-analytic work with a patient that an analyst can succeed in learning the actual content of a phobia, the precise form of words of an obsessional impulse, and so on. Repression has not only descended upon the unconscious complexes, but it is continually attacking their derivatives as well, and even prevents the patient from becoming aware of the products of the disease itself. The analyst thus finds himself in the position, curious for a doctor, of coming to the help of a disease, and of procuring its due of attention.1 But only those who entirely misunderstand the nature of psycho-analysis will lay stress upon this phase of the work and suppose that on its account harm is likely to be done by analysis. The fact is that you must catch your thief before you can hang him, and that it requires some expenditure of labour to get securely hold of the pathological structures at the destruction of which the treatment is aimed.

I have already remarked in the course of my running com-

last two sentences struck the translators as obscure, and, on Freud's instructions, they were omitted from the English translation in 1925. The issue involved in this footnote seems to be analogous to the question of the innateness of "primal phantasies". See footnotes pp. 8 and 206 ff.

1 [Similarly with obsessional neuroses. See the case of the 'Rat Man', below, p. 223.]
DISCUSSION

125

mentary on the case history [p. 51] that it is most instructive to plunge in this way into the details of a phobia, and thus arrive at a conviction of the secondary nature of the relation between the anxiety and its objects. It is this that accounts for phobias being at once so curiously diffuse and so strictly conditioned. It is evident that the material for the particular disguises which Hans's fear adopted was collected from the impressions to which he was all day long exposed owing to the Head Customs House being situated on the opposite side of the street. In this connection, too, he showed signs of an impulse—though it was now inhibited by his anxiety—to play with the loads on the carts, with the packages, casks and boxes, like the street-boys.

It was at this stage of the analysis that he recalled the event, insignificant in itself, which immediately preceded the outbreak of the illness and may no doubt be regarded as the precipitating cause of its outbreak. He went for a walk with his mother, and saw a bus-horse fall down and kick about with its feet [p. 49]. This made a great impression on him. He was terrified, and thought the horse was dead; and from that time on he thought that all horses would fall down. His father pointed out to him that when he saw the horse fall down he must have thought of him, his father, and have wished that he might fall down in the same way and be dead. Hans did not dispute this interpretation; and a little while later he played a game consisting of biting his father, and so showed that he accepted the theory of his having identified his father with the horse he was afraid of [p. 52]. From that time forward his behaviour to his father was unconstrained and fearless, and in fact a trifle overbearing. Nevertheless his fear of horses persisted; nor was it yet clear through what chain of associations the horse's falling down had stirred up his unconscious wishes.

1 [This point is elaborated by Freud in a discussion of 'systems' in his Totem and Taboo (1912-13), Standard Ed., 13, 96-7.]

[This page has been translated into German as follows: Etikrise


In diesem Stadium der Analyse findet er das an sich nicht bedeutsame Erlebnis wieder, welches dem Ausbruche der Krankheit unmittelbar vorausgegangen ist, und das wohl als die Veranlassung für diesen Ausbruch angesehen werden darf. Er ging mit der Mama spazieren und sah ein Stellwagenpferd umfallen und mit den Füßen zappeln [S. 47]. Dies machte auf ihn einen großen Eindruck. Er erschrak heftig, meinte, das Pferd sei tot; von jetzt ab würden alle Pferde umfallen. Der Vater weist ihn darauf hin, daß er bei dem fallenden Pferde an ihn, den Vater, gedacht und gewünscht haben muß, er solle so fallen und tot sein. Hans sträubt sich nicht gegen diese Deutung; ein Weile später akzeptiert er durch ein Spiel, das er aufführt, indem er den Vater beißt, die Identifizierung des Vaters mit dem gefürchteten Pferd [S. 49] und benennt sich von da ab frei und furchtlos, ja, selbst ein wenig übermütig gegen seinen Vater. Die Angst vor Pferden hält aber noch an, und infolge welcher Verkettung das fallende Pferd seine unbewußten Wünsche aufgerührt hat, ist uns noch nicht klar.
Let me summarize the results that had so far been reached. Behind the fear to which Hans first gave expression, the fear of a horse biting him, we had discovered a more deeply seated fear, the fear of horses falling down; and both kinds of horses, the biting horse and the falling horse, had been shown to represent his father, who was going to punish him for the evil wishes he was nourishing against him. Meanwhile the analysis had moved away from the subject of his mother.

Quite unexpectedly, and certainly without any prompting from his father, Hans now began to be occupied with the "lumpf" complex, and to show disgust at things that reminded him of evacuating his bowels [p. 55]. His father, who was reluctant to go with him along that line, pushed on with the analysis through thick and thin in the direction in which he wanted to go. He elicited from Hans the recollection of an event at Gmunden, the impression of which lay concealed behind that of the falling bus-horse. While they were playing at horses, Fritzl, the playmate of whom he was so fond, but at the same time, perhaps, his rival with his many girl friends, had hit his foot against a stone and had fallen down, and his foot had bled [p. 58]. Seeing the bus-horse fall had reminded him of this accident. It deserves to be noticed that Hans, who was at the moment concerned with other things began by denying that Fritzl had fallen down (though this, was the event which formed the connection between the two scenes) and only admitted it at a later stage of the analysis [p. 82]. It is especially interesting, however, to observe the way in which the transformation of Hans's libido into anxiety was projected on to the principal object of his phobia, on to horses. Horses interested him the most of all the large animals; playing at horses was his favourite game with the other children. I had a suspicion—and this was confirmed by Hans's father when I asked him—that the first person who had served Hans as a horse must have been his father; and it

Fassen wir zusammen, was sich bisher ergeben hat: Hinter der erst geäußerten Angst, das Pferd werde ihn beißen, ist die tiefer liegende Angst, die Pferde werden umfallen, aufgedeckt worden, und beide, das beißende wie das fallende Pferd, sind der Vater, der ihn strafen wird, weil er so böse Wünsche gegen ihn hegt. Von der Mutter sind wir unterdessen in der Analyse abgekommen.

Ganz unerwartet und gewiß ohne Dazutun des Vaters beginnt nun Hans sich mit dem »Lumpfkomplex« zu beschäftigen und Ekel vor Dingen zu zeigen, die ihn an die Stuhlentleerung erinnern [S. 51 f.]. Der Vater, der hier nur ungerne mitgeht, setzt mittendrin die Fortsetzung der Analyse durch, wie er sie leiten möchte, und bringt Hans zur Erinnerung eines Erlebnisses in Gmunden, dessen Eindruck sich hinter dem des fallenden Stellwagenpferdes verbarg. Fritzl, sein geliebter Spielgenosse, vielleicht auch sein Konkurrent bei den vielen Gespielinnen, hatte im Pferdespiel, mit dem Öl und einen Stein gestoßen, war umgefallen, und der Fuß hatte blutet [S. 54]. An diesen Unfall hatte das Erlebnis mit dem fallenden Stellwagenpferd erinnert. Es ist bemerkenswert, daß Hans, der zur Zeit mit anderen Dingen beschäftigt ist, das Umfallen Fritzls, das den Zusammenhang herstellt, zuerst leugnet, erst in einem späteren Stadium der Analyse zugesteh [S. 74].
was this that had enabled him to regard Fritzl as a substitute for his father when the accident happened at Gmunden. When repression had set in and brought a revulsion of feeling along with it, horses, which had till then been associated with so much pleasure, were necessarily turned into objects of fear.

But, as we have already said, it was owing to the intervention of Hans's father that this last important discovery was made of the way in which the precipitating cause of the illness had operated. Hans himself was occupied with his lump interests, and thither at last we must follow him. We learn that formerly Hans had been in the habit of insisting upon accompanying his mother to the W.C. [p. 63], and that he had revived this custom with his friend Berta at a time when she was filling his mother's place, until the fact became known and he was forbidden to do so [p. 61]. Pleasure taken in looking on while some one loves performs the natural functions is once more a 'confluence of instincts', of which we have already noticed an instance in Hans [p. 106]. In the end his father went into the lump symbolism, and recognized that there was an analogy between a heavily loaded cart and a body loaded with faeces, between the way in which a cart drives out through a gateway and the way in which faeces leave the body, and so on [pp. 66-8].

By this time, however, the position occupied by Hans in the analysis had become very different from what it had been at an earlier stage. Previously, his father had been able to tell him in advance what was coming, while Hans had merely followed his lead and come trotting after; but now it was Hans who was forging ahead, so rapidly and steadily that his father found it difficult to keep up with him. Without any warning, as it were, Hans produced a new phantasy: the plumber unscrewed the bath in which Hans was, and then stuck him in the stomach with his big borer [p. 65]. Henceforward the material brought up in the analysis far outstripped our
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

powers of understanding it. It was not until later that it was possible to guess that this was a remoulding of a phantasy of procreation, distorted by anxiety. The big bath of water, in which Hans imagined himself, was his mother's womb; the 'borer', which his father had from the first recognized as a penis, owed its mention to its connection with 'being born'. The interpretation that we are obliged to give to the phantasy will of course sound very curious: 'With your big penis you "bored" me (i.e. 'gave birth to me') 'and put me in my mother's womb.' For the moment, however, the phantasy eluded interpretation, and merely served Hans as a starting-point from which to continue giving information.

Hans showed fear of being given a bath in the big bath [p. 66]; and this fear was once more a composite one. One part of it escaped us as yet, but the other part could be elucidated in connection with his baby sister having her bath. Hans confessed to having wished that his mother might drop the child while she was being given her bath, so that she should die [p. 72]. His own anxiety while he was having his bath was a fear of retribution for this evil wish and of being punished by the same thing happening to him. Hans now left the subject of lump and passed on directly to that of his baby sister. We may well imagine what this juxtaposition signified: nothing less, in fact, than that little Hanna was a lump — that all babies were lumps and were born like lumps. We can now recognize that all furniture-vans and drays and buses were only stork-box carts, and were only of interest to Hans as being symbolic representations of pregnancy; and that when a heavy or heavily loaded horse fell down he can have seen in it only one thing — a childbirth, a delivery ['ein Niederkommen'].

Thus the falling horse was not only his dying father but also his mother in childbirth.

1 [See footnote, p. 96.—Further discussion of this particular symbolism will be found near the end of Freud's paper on a childhood memory of Goethe's (1917b).]
And at this point Hans gave us a surprise, for which we were not in the very least prepared. He had noticed his mother’s pregnancy, which had ended with the birth of his little sister when he was three and a half years old, and had, at any rate after the confinement, pieced the facts of the case together—without telling any one, it is true, and perhaps without being able to tell any one. All that could be seen at the time was that immediately after the delivery he had taken up an extremely sceptical attitude towards everything that might be supposed to point to the presence of the stork [p. 10]. But that—in complete contradiction to his official speeches—he knew in his unconscious where the baby came from and where it had been before, is proved beyond a shadow of doubt by the present analysis; indeed, this is perhaps its most unassailable feature.

The most cogent evidence of this is furnished by the phantasy (which he persisted in with so much obstinacy, and embellished with such a wealth of detail) of how Hanna had been with them at Gmunden the summer before her birth, of how she had travelled there with them, and of how she had been able to do far more then than she had a year later, after she had been born [p. 69 ff.]. The effrontery with which Hans related this phantasy and the countless extravagant lies with which he interwove it were anything but meaningless. All of this was intended as a revenge upon his father, against whom he harboured a grudge for having misled him with the stork fable. It was just as though he had meant to say: ‘If you really thought I was as stupid as all that, and expected me to believe that the stork brought Hanna, then in return I expect you to accept my inventions as the truth.’ This act of revenge on the part of our young enquirer upon his father was succeeded by the clearly correlated phantasy of teasing and beating horses [p. 79]. This phantasy, again, had two constituents. On the one hand, it was based upon the teasing to which he had submitted his father just before; and, on the other hand, it

Und nun bringt Hans die Überraschung, auf welche wir in der Tat nicht vorbereitet waren. Er hat die Gravidität der Mutter, die ja mit der Geburt der Kleinen endigte, als er 3½ Jahre war, bemerkt und sich den richtigen Sachverhalt, wenigstens nach der Entbindung, konstruiert, wohl obwohl er es ihnen zu erzählen, vielleicht ohnedie äußern, zu können; es war damals nur zu beobachten, daß er unmittelbar nach der Entbindung sich so sehr skeptisch gegen alle Zeichen, die auf die Anwesenheit des Storches deuten sollten, benahm [S. 17]. Aber daß er im Unbewußten und ganz im Gegensatze zu seinen offiziellen Reden gewußt, woher das Kind kam und wo es früher verweilt hatte, das wird durch diese Analyse gegen jeden Zweifel sicher dargetan; es ist vielleicht das unerschütterlichste Stück derselben.

Den zwingenden Beweis dafür erbringt die hartnäckig festgehaltene, mit soviel Einzelheiten ausgeschmückte Phantasie, daß Hanna schon im Sommer vor ihrer Geburt mit ihnen in Gmunden war, wie sie hingereist ist und damals soviel mehr leisten konnte als ein Jahr später, nach ihrer Geburt [S. 63–4]. Die Frechheit, mit der Hans diese Phantasie vorträgt, die ungezählten tollen Lügen, die er in sie einflickt, sind beileibe nicht sinnlos; das alles soll seiner Rache am Vater dienen, dem er wegen der Irrführung durch das Storchmärchen grollt. Es ist ganz so, als ob er sagen wollte: hast du mich für so dumm gehalten und mir zugemutet zu glauben, daß der Storch die Hanna gebracht hat, so kann ich dafür von dir verlangen, daß du meine Erfindungen für Wahrheit nimmst. In durchsichtigem Zusammenhange mit diesem Racheakte des kleinen Forschers an seinem Vater reiht sich nun die Phantasie vom Necken und Schlagen der Pferde an [S. 71]. Sie ist wiederum doppelt gefügt, lehnt sich einerseits an die Neekerei an, der er eben den Vater unterzogen hat, und bringt andererseits
reproduced the obscure sadistic desires directed towards his mother, which had already found expression (though they had not at first been understood) in his phantasies of doing something forbidden. Hans even confessed consciously to a desire to beat his mother [p. 81].

There are not many more mysteries ahead of us now. An obscure phantasy of missing a train [p. 81] seems to have been a forerunner of the later notion of handing over Hans's father to his grandmother at Lainz, for the phantasy dealt with a visit to Lainz, and his grandmother appeared in it. Another phantasy, in which a boy gave the guard 50,000 florins to let him ride on the truck [p. 83], almost sounds like a plan of buying his mother from his father, part of whose power, of course, lay in his wealth. At about this time, too, he confessed, with a degree of openness which he had never before reached, that he wished to get rid of his father, and that the reason he wished it was that his father interfered with his own intimacy with his mother [p. 82]. We must not be surprised to find the same wishes constantly reappearing in the course of an analysis. The monotony only attaches to the analyst's interpretations of these wishes. For Hans they were not mere repetitions, but steps in a progressive development from timid hinting to fully conscious, undistorted perspicuity.

What remains are just such confirmations on Hans's part of analytical conclusions which our interpretations had already established. In an entirely unequivocal-symptomatic act, which he disguised slightly from the maid but not at all from his father, he showed how he imagined a birth took place [p. 84]; but if we look into it more closely we can see that he showed something else, that he was hinting at something which was not alluded to again in the analysis. He pushed a small penknife which belonged to his mother through a round hole in the body of an india-rubber doll, and then let it drop out again by tearing apart the doll's legs. The
DISCUSSION

enlightenment which he received from his parents soon afterwards [p. 87], to the effect that children do in fact grow inside their mother’s body and are pushed out of it like a lump, came too late; it could tell him nothing new. Another symptomatic act, happening as though by accident, involved a confession that he had wished his father dead; for, just at the moment his father was talking of this death-wish, Hans let a horse that he was playing with fall down—knocked it over in fact. Further, he confirmed in so many words the hypothesis that heavily loaded carts represented his mother’s pregnancy to him, and the horse’s falling down was like having a baby. The most delightful piece of confirmation in this connection—a proof that, in his view, children were ‘lumps’—was his inventing the name of ‘Lodi’ for his favourite child. There was some delay in reporting this fact, for it then appeared that he had been playing with this sausage child of his for a long time past [p. 93].

We have already considered Hans’s two concluding phantasies, with which his recovery was rounded off. One of them [p. 98], that of the plumber giving him a new and, as his father guessed, a bigger widdler, was not merely a repetition of the earlier phantasy concerning the plumber and the bath. The new one was a triumphant, wishful phantasy, and with it he overcame his fear of castration. His other phantasy [pp. 96–7], which confessed to the wish to be married to his mother and to have many children by her, did not merely exhaust the content of the unconscious complexes which had been stirred up by the sight of the falling horse and which had generated his anxiety. It also corrected that portion of those

Epikrise

Die darauffolgende Aufklärung durch die Eltern [S. 78], daß Kinder tatsächlich im Leibe der Mutter wachsen und wie ein Lumpf herausbefördert werden, kommt zu spät; sie kann ihm nichts mehr Neues sagen. Durch eine andere, wie zufällig erfolgende Symptomhandlung gibt er zu, daß er den Vater tot gewünscht hat, indem er ein Pferd, mit dem er spielt, umfallen läßt, d. h. umwirft, in dem Momente, da der Vater von diesem Todeswunsch spricht. Mit Worten bekräftigt er, daß die schwer beladenen Wagen ihm die Gravidität der Mutter vorstellten, und daß das Umfallen des Pferdes so war, wie wenn man ein Kind bekommt. Die köstlichste Bestätigung in diesem Zusammenhange, der Beweis, daß Kinder »Lumpfe« sind, durch die Erfindung des Namens »Lodi« für sein Lieblingskind kommt nur verspätet zu unserer Kenntnis, denn wir hören, daß er mit diesem Wurstkinde schon die längste Zeit gespielt hat [S. 83].

Die beiden abschließenden Phantasien Hansens, mit denen seine Herstellung vollkommen wird, haben wir bereits gewürdigt. Die eine, von Installateur, der ihm einen neuen und, wie der Vater errät, größeren Wiwimacher ansetzt [S. 86], ist doch nicht bloß die Wiederholung der früheren, die sich mit dem Installateur und der Badewanne beschäftigte. Sie ist eine siegreiche Wunschphanasie und enthält die Überwindung der Kastrationsangst. Die zweite Phantasie, die den Wunsch eingestehst, mit der Mutter verheiratet zu sein und viele Kinder mit ihr zu haben [S. 85–6], erschöpft nicht bloß den Inhalt jener unbewussten Komplexe, die sich beim Anblicke des fallenden Pferdes gerührt und Angst entwickelt hatten — sie korrigiert auch,

1 I remember a set of drawings by T. T. Heine in a copy of Simplicissimus, in which that brilliant illustrator depicted the fate of the pork-butcher’s child, who fell into the sausage machine, and then, in the shape of a small sausage, was mourned over by his parents, received the Church’s blessing, and flew up to Heaven. The artist’s idea seems a puzzling one at first, but the Lodi episode in this analysis enables us to trace it back to its infantile root.
thoughts which was entirely unacceptable; for, instead of killing his father, it made him innocuous by promoting him to a marriage with Hans's grandmother. With this phantasy both the illness and the analysis came to an appropriate end.

While the analysis of a case is in progress it is impossible to obtain any clear impression of the structure and development of the neurosis. That is the business of a synthetic process which must be performed subsequently. In attempting to carry out such a synthesis of little Hans's phobia we shall take as our basis the account of his mental constitution, of his governing sexual wishes, and of his experiences up to the time of his sister's birth, which we have given in an earlier part of this paper.

The arrival of his sister brought into Hans's life many new elements, which from that time on gave him no rest. In the first place he was obliged to submit to a certain degree of privation: to begin with, a temporary separation from his mother, and later a permanent diminution in the amount of care and attention which he had received from her and which thenceforward he had to grow accustomed to sharing with his sister. In the second place, he experienced a revival of the pleasures he had enjoyed when he was looked after as an infant; for they were called up by all that he saw his mother doing for the baby. As a result of these two influences his erotic needs became intensified, while at the same time they began to obtain insufficient satisfaction. He made up for the loss which his sister's arrival had entailed on him by imagining that he had children of his own; and so long as he was at Gmunden—on his second visit there—and could really play with these children, he found a sufficient outlet for his affections. But after his return to Vienna he was once more alone, and set all his hopes upon his mother. He had meanwhile suffered another privation, having been exiled

1 [This parenthesis was added in 1924.]

1 [Diese Parenthese wurde 1924 hinzugefügt.]
from his parents' bedroom at the age of four and a half. His intensified erotic excitability now found expression in fantasies, by which in his loneliness he conjured up his playmates of the past summer, and in regular auto-erotic satisfaction obtained by a masturbatory stimulation of his genitals.

But in the third place his sister's birth stimulated him to an effort of thought which, on the one hand, it was impossible to bring to a conclusion, and which, on the other hand, involved him in emotional conflicts. He was faced with the great riddle of where babies come from, which is perhaps the first problem to engage a child's mental powers, and of which the riddle of the Theban Sphinx is probably no more than a distorted version. He rejected the proffered solution of the stork having brought Hanna. For he had noticed that months before the baby's birth his mother's body had grown big, that then she had gone to bed, and had groaned while the birth was taking place, and that when she got up she was thin again. He therefore inferred that Hanna had been inside his mother's body, and had then come out like a 'lump'. He was able to imagine the act of giving birth as a pleasurable one by relating it to his own first feelings of pleasure in passing stool; and he was thus able to find a double motive for wishing to have children of his own: the pleasure of giving birth to them and the pleasure (the compensatory pleasure, as it were) of looking after them. There was nothing in all of this that could have led him into doubts or conflicts.

But there was something else, which could not fail to make him uneasy. His father must have had something to

1 [In the earlier editions 'four', which was altered to 'four and a half' in 1924. See, however, Hans's father's remark (3) on p. 99. The sleeping-arrangements may have been changed at the time of the move into the new flat (p. 15).]

2 [Freud emended this view, as regards girls, in a footnote to his paper on the distinction between the sexes (1925)].]
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

do with little Hanna's birth, for he had declared that Hanna and Hans himself were his children. Yet it was certainly not his father who had brought them into the world, but his mother. This father of his came between him and his mother. When he was there Hans could not sleep with his mother, and when his mother wanted to take Hans into bed with her, his father used to call out. Hans had learnt from experience how well-off he could be in his father's absence, and it was only justifiable that he should wish to get rid of him. And then Hans's hostility had received a fresh reinforcement. His father had told him the lie about the stork and so made it impossible for him to ask for enlightenment upon these things. He not only prevented his being in bed with his mother, but also kept from him the knowledge he was thirsting for. He was putting Hans at a disadvantage in both directions, and was obviously doing so for his own benefit.

But this father, whom he could not help hating as a rival, was the same father whom he had always loved and was bound to go on loving, who had been his model, had been his first playmate, and had looked after him from his earliest infancy: and this it was that gave rise to the first conflict. Nor could this conflict find an immediate solution. For Hans's nature had so developed that for the moment his love could not but keep the upper hand and suppress his hate—though it could not kill it, for his hate was perpetually kept alive by his love for his mother.

But his father not only knew where children came from, he actually performed it—the thing that Hans could only obscurely divine. The widdler must have something to do with it, for his own grew excited whenever he thought of these things—and it must be a big widdler too, bigger than Hans's own. If he listened to these premonitory sensations he could only suppose that it was a question of some act of violence performed upon his mother, of smashing something, of making an opening into something, of forcing a way into


Daß er nun diesen selben Vater, den er als Konkurrenten hassen mußte, seit jeher geliebt hatte und weiter lieben mußte, daß er ihm Vorbild war, sein erster Spielenosse und gleichfalls sein Pfleger aus den ersten Jahren, das, ergab den ersten, zunächst nicht lösbaren Gefühlskonflikt. Wie Hansens Natur sich entwickelt hatte, mußte die Liebe vorläßig die Oberhand behalten und den Haß unterdrücken, ohne ihn aufheben zu können, denn er wurde von der Liebe zur Mutter her immer von neuem gespeist.

Der Vater mußte aber nicht nur, woher die Kinder kommen, er übte es auch wirklich aus, das, was Hans nur dunkel ahnen konnte. Der Wiwimacher mußte etwas damit zu tun haben, dessen Erregung all diese Gedanken begleitete, und zwar ein größer, größer als Hans seinen fand. Folgte man den Empfindungsandeutungen, die sich da ergaben, so mußte es sich um eine Gewalttätigkeit handeln, die man an der Mama verübte, um ein Zerschlagen, ein Öffnungsschaffen, ein Eindringen in einen
an enclosed space—such were the impulses that he felt stirring within him. But although the sensations of his penis had put him on the road to postulating a vagina, yet he could not solve the problem, for within his experience no such thing existed as his widdler required. On the contrary, his conviction that his mother possessed a penis just as he did stood in the way of any solution. His attempt at discovering what it was that had to be done with his mother in order that she might have children sank down into his unconscious; and his two active impulses—the hostile one towards his father and the sadistic-tender one towards his mother—could be put to no use, the first because of the love that existed side by side with the hatred, and the second because of the perplexity in which his infantile sexual theories left him.

This is how, basing my conclusions upon the findings of the analysis, I am obliged to reconstruct the unconscious complexes and wishes, the repression and reawakening of which produced little Hans's phobia. I am aware that in so doing I am attributing a great deal to the mental capacity of a child between four and five years of age; but I have let myself be guided by what we have recently learned, and I do not consider myself bound by the prejudices of our ignorance. It might perhaps have been possible to make use of Hans's fear of the 'making a row with the legs' for filling up a few more gaps in our adjudication upon the evidence. Hans, it is true, declared that it reminded him of his kicking about with his legs when he was compelled to leave off playing so as to do lump; so that this element of the neurosis becomes connected with the problem whether his mother liked having children or was compelled to have them. But I have an impression that this is not the whole explanation of the 'making a row with the legs'. Hans's father was unable to confirm my suspicion that there was some recollection stirring in the child's mind of having observed a scene of abgeschlossenen Raum, den Impuls dazu konnte das Kind in sich verspüren; aber obwohl es auf dem Wege war, von seinen Penissensationen aus, die Vagina zu postulieren, so konnte es doch das Rätsel nicht lösen, denn so etwas, wie der Wiwimacher es brauchte, bestand ja in seiner Kenntnis nicht; vielmehr stand der Lösung die Überzeugung im Wege, daß die Mama einen Wiwimacher wie er besitze. Der Lösungsversuch, was man mit der Mama anfangen müßte, damit sie Kinder bekomme, versank im Unbewußten, und beiderlei aktive Impulse, der feindselige gegen den Vater wie der sadistisch-zärtliche gegen die Mutter, blieben verwendungslos, der eine infolge der neben dem Hasse vorhandenen Liebe, der andere vermöge der Ratlosigkeit, die sich aus den infantilen Sexualtheorien ergab.

sexual intercourse between his parents in their bedroom. So let us be content with what we have discovered.

It is hard to say what the influence was which, in the situation we have just sketched, led to the sudden change in Hans and to the transformation of his libidinal longing into anxiety—to say from what direction it was that repression set in. The question could probably only be decided by making a comparison between this analysis and a number of similar ones. Whether the scales were turned by the child’s *intellectual* inability to solve the difficult problem of the be-getting of children and to cope with the aggressive impulses that were liberated by his approaching its solution, or whether the effect was produced by a *somatic* incapacity, a constitutional intolerance of the masturbatory gratification in which he regularly indulged (whether, that is, the mere persistence of sexual excitement at such a high pitch of intensity was bound to bring about a revulsion)—this question must be left open until fresh experience can come to our assistance.

Chronological considerations make it impossible for us to attach any great importance to the actual precipitating cause of the outbreak of Hans’s illness, for he had shown signs of apprehensiveness long before he saw the bus-horse fall down in the street.

Nevertheless, the neurosis took its start directly from this chance event and preserved a trace of it in the circumstance of the horse being exalted into the object of his anxiety. In itself the impression of the accident which he happened to witness carried no ‘traumatic force’; it acquired its great effectiveness only from the fact that horses had formerly been of importance to him as objects of his predilection and interest, from the fact that he associated the event in his mind with an earlier event at Gmunden which had more claim to be regarded as traumatic, namely, with Fritzl’s falling down while he was playing at horses, and lastly from the fact that there was an easy path of association from the Vater nicht bestätigen. Begnügen wir uns also mit dem, was wir erfahren haben.

Durch welchen Einfluß es in der geschilderten Situation bei Hans zum Umkippen, zur Verwandlung der libidinösen Sehnsucht in Angst gekommen ist, an welchem Ende da die Verdrängung eingesetzt hat, das ist schwer zu sagen und könnte wohl nur durch die Vergleichung mit mehreren ähnlichen Analysen zu entscheiden sein; ob das intellektuelle Unvermögen des Kindes, das schwierige Problem der Kinderzeugung zu lösen und die durch die Annäherung an die Lösung entbundenen aggressiven Impulse zu verwerten, den Ausschlag gab oder ein somatisches Unvermögen, eine Intoleranz seiner Konstitution gegen die regelmäßig geübte masturbatorische Befriedigung, ob die bloße Fortdauer der sexuellen Erregung in so hoher Intensität zum Umschlage führten mußte, das stelle ich als fraglich hin, bis uns weitere Erfahrung zu Hilfe kommt.

Dem Gelegenheitsursache für den Ausbruch der Krankheit zu viel Einfluß zuzuschreiben, verbieten die zeitlichen Verhältnisse, denn Andeutungen von Angstlichkeit waren bei Hans lange vorher, ehe er das Stellwagenpferd auf der Straße umfielen sah, zu beobachten.

Immerhin knüpfte die Neurose direkt an dieses akzidentelle Erlebnis an und bewahrte die Spur desselben in der Erhebung des Pferdes zum Angstobjekt. Eine »traumatische Kraft« kommt diesem Eindrucke an und für sich nicht zu; nur die frühere Bedeutung des Pferdes als Gegenstand der Vorliebe und des Interesses und die Anknüpfung an das traumatisch geeigneter Erlebnis in Gmunden, wie Fritzl beim Pferdespiel umfiel, sowie der leichte Assoziationsweg von Fritzl zum Vater, haben den zufällig beobachteten Unfall mit so großer Wirksamkeit ausge-
Fritzl to his father. Indeed, even these connections would probably not have been sufficient if it had not been that, thanks to the pliability and ambiguity of associative chains, the same event showed itself capable of stirring the second of the complexes that lurked in Hans's unconscious, the complex of his pregnant mother's confinement. From that moment the way was clear for the return of the repressed; and it returned in such a manner that the pathogenic material was remodelled and transposed on to the horse-complex, while the accompanying affects were uniformly turned into anxiety.

It deserves to be noticed that the ideational content of Hans's phobia as it then stood had to be submitted to one further process of distortion and substitution before his consciousness took cognizance of it. Hans's first formulation of his anxiety was: 'the horse will bite me'; and this was derived from another episode at Gmunden, which was on the one hand related to his hostile wishes towards his father and on the other hand was reminiscent of the warning he had been given against masturbation. Some interfering influence, emanating from his parents perhaps, had made itself felt. I am not certain whether the reports upon Hans were at that time drawn up with sufficient care to enable us to decide whether he expressed his anxiety in this form before or not until after his mother had taken him to task on the subject of masturbating. I should be inclined to suspect that it was not until afterwards, though this would contradict the account given in the case history. [See p. 24.] At any rate, it is evident that at every point Hans's hostile complex against his father screened his lustful one about his mother, just as it was the first to be disclosed and dealt with in the analysis.

In other cases of this kind there would be a great deal more to be said upon the structure, the development, and the diffusion of the neurosis. But the history of little Hans's attack was very short; almost as soon as it had begun, its place was taken by the history of its treatment. And although it started. Ja, wahrscheinlich hätten auch diese Beziehungen nicht ausge- reicht, wenn nicht dank der Schmiegsamkeit und der Vieldeutigkeit der Assoziationsverknüpfungen der gleiche Eindruck sich auch [als] geeignet erwiesen hätte, an den zweiten der im Unbewussten bei Hans lauernden Komplexe, an den von der Niederkunft der graviden Mutter, zu rühren. Von da an war der Weg zur Wiederkehr des Verdrängten eröffnet, und nun wurde er in der Weise beschritten, daß das pathogene Material auf den Pferdekomplex umgearbeitet (transponiert) und die begleitenden Affekte uniform in Angst verwandelt erschienen.

Bemerkenswerterweise mußte sich der nunmehrige Vorstellungsinhalt der Phobie noch eine Entstellung und Ersetzung gefallen lassen, ehe das Bewußtsein Kenntnis von ihm nahm. Der erste Wortlaut der Angst, den Hans äußerte, war: das Pferd wird mich beisei; er rührt aus einer anderen Szene in Gmunden her, die einerseits Beziehung zum feind­seligen Wunsche gegen den Vater hat, anderseits an die Onanieverwarnung erinnert. Es hat sich da ein ablenkender Einfluß geltend gemacht, der vielleicht von den Eltern ausging; ich bin nicht sicher, ob die Berichte über Hans damals sorgfältig genug abgefaßt wurden, um uns entscheiden zu lassen, ob er seiner Angst diesen Ausdruck gegeben, ehe oder erst nachdem ihn die Mutter wegen seiner Masturbation zur Rede gestellt hatte.

Im Gegensatze zur Darstellung der Krankengeschichte möchte ich das letztere vermuten [s. S. 27]. Im übrigen ist unverkennbar, daß der feindselige Komplex gegen den Vater bei Hans überall den lüsternen gegen die Mutter verdeckt, sowie er auch in der Analyse zuerst aufgedeckt und erledigt wurde.

In anderen Krankheitsfällen fände sich weit mehr über die Struktur einer Neurose, ihre Entwicklung und Ausbreitung zu sagen, aber die Krankheitsgeschichte unseres kleinen Hans ist sehr kurz; sie wird alsbald nach ihrem Beginne von der Behandlungsgeschichte abgelöst. Wenn
A PHOBIA IN A FIVE-YEAR-OLD BOY

during the treatment the phobia appeared to develop further and to extend over new objects and to lay down new conditions, his father, since he was himself treating the case, naturally had sufficient penetration to see that it was merely a question of the emergence of material that was already in existence, and not of fresh productions for which the treatment might be held responsible. In the treatment of other cases it would not always be possible to count upon so much penetration.

Before I can regard this synthesis as completed I must turn to yet another aspect of the case, which will take us into the very heart of the difficulties that lie in the way of our understanding of neurotic states. We have seen how our little patient was overtaken by a great wave of repression and that it caught precisely those of his sexual components that were dominant. He gave up masturbation, and turned away in disgust from everything that reminded him of excrement and of looking on at other people performing their natural functions. But these were not the components which were stirred up by the precipitating cause of the illness (his seeing the horse fall down) or which provided the material for the symptoms, that is, the content of the phobia.

This allows us, therefore, to make a radical distinction. We shall probably come to understand the case more deeply if we turn to those other components which do fulfill the two conditions that have just been mentioned. These other components were tendencies in Hans which had already been suppressed and which, so far as we can tell, had never been able to find uninhibited expression: hostile and jealous feelings towards his father, and sadistic impulses (premonitions, as it were, of copulation) towards his mother. These

1 Hans's father even observed that simultaneously with this repression a certain amount of sublimation set in. From the time of the beginning of his anxiety Hans began to show an increased interest in music and to develop his inherited musical gift.
early suppressions may perhaps have gone to form the predisposition for his subsequent illness. These aggressive propensities of Hans's found no outlet, and as soon as there came a time of privation and intensified sexual excitement, they tried to break their way out with reinforced strength. It was then that the battle which we call his 'phobia' burst out. During the course of it a part of the repressed ideas, in a distorted form and transposed on to another complex, forced their way into consciousness as the content of the phobia. But it was a decidedly paltry success. Victory lay with the forces of repression; and they made use of the opportunity to extend their dominion over components other than those that had rebelled. This last circumstance, however, does not in the least alter the fact that the essence of Hans's illness was entirely dependent upon the nature of the instinctual components that had to be repulsed. The content of his phobia was such as to impose a very great measure of restriction upon his freedom of movement, and that was its purpose. It was therefore a powerful reaction against the obscure impulses to movement which were especially directed against his mother. For Hans horses had always typified pleasure in movement ('I'm a young horse', he had said as he jumped about [p. 58]); but since this pleasure in movement included the impulse to copulate, the neurosis imposed a restriction on it and exalted the horse into an emblem of terror. Thus it would seem as though all that the repressed instincts got from the neurosis was the honour of providing pretexts for the appearance of the anxiety in consciousness. But however clear may have been the victory in Hans's phobia of the forces that were opposed to sexuality, nevertheless, since such an illness is in its very nature a compromise, this cannot have been all that the repressed instincts obtained. After all, Hans's phobia of horses was an obstacle to his going into the street, and could serve as a means of allowing him to stay at home with his beloved mother. In this way, therefore, his
affection for his mother triumphantly achieved its aim. In consequence of his phobia, the lover clung to the object of his love—though, to be sure, steps had been taken to make him innocuous. The true character of a neurotic disorder is exhibited in this twofold result.

Alfred Adler, in a suggestive paper, has recently developed the view that anxiety arises from the suppression of what he calls the 'aggressive instinct', and by a very sweeping synthetic process he ascribes to that instinct the chief part in human events, 'in real life and in the neuroses'. As we have come to the conclusion that in our present case of phobia the anxiety is to be explained as being due to the repression of Hans's aggressive propensities (the hostile ones against his father and the sadistic ones against his mother), we seem to have produced a most striking piece of confirmation of Adler's view. I am nevertheless unable to assent to it, and indeed I regard it as a misleading generalization. I cannot bring myself to assume the existence of a special aggressive instinct alongside of the familiar instincts of self-preservation and of sex, and on an equal footing with them. It appears to me that Adler has mistakenly promoted into a special and self-

1 'Der Aggressionsbetrieb im Leben und in der Neurose' (1908). This is the same paper from which I have borrowed the term 'confluence of instincts'. (See above, p. 106 [and 127].)

2 (Footnote added 1923:) The above passage was written at a time when Adler seemed still to be taking his stand upon the ground of psycho-analysis, and before he had put forward the masculine protest and disavowed repression. Since then I have myself been obliged to assert the existence of an 'aggressive instinct', but it is different from Adler's. I prefer to call it the 'destructive' or 'death instinct'. See Beyond the Pleasure Principle (1920g) and The Ego and the Id (1923d). Its opposition to the libidinal instincts finds an expression in the familiar polarity of love and hate. My disagreement with Adler's view, which is explained later in the paragraph, results in a universal characteristic of instincts in general being reduced to be the property of a single one of them, remains unaltered.—[A detailed account of Freud's differences with Adler will be found in the latter part of his 'History of the Psycho-Analytic Movement' (1914d).]
subsisting instinct what is in reality a universal and indispensible attribute of all instincts—their instinctual [triebhaft] and ‘pressing’ character, what might be described as their capacity for initiating movement. Nothing would then remain of the other instincts but their relation to an aim, for their relation to the means of reaching that aim would have been taken over from them by the ‘aggressive instinct’. In spite of all the uncertainty and obscurity of our theory of instincts I should prefer for the present to adhere to the usual view, which leaves each instinct its own power of becoming aggressive; and I should be inclined to recognize the two instincts which became repressed in Hans as familiar components of the sexual libido.

(iii)

I shall now proceed to what I hope will be a brief discussion of how far little Hans’s phobia offers any contribution of general importance to our views upon the life and upbringing of children. But before doing so I must return to the objection which has so long been held over, and according to which Hans was a neurotic, a ‘degenerate’ with a bad heredity, and not a normal child, knowledge about whom could be applied to other children. I have for some time been thinking with pain of the way in which the adherents of ‘the normal person’ will fall upon poor little Hans as soon as they are told that he can in fact be shown to have had a hereditary taint. His beautiful mother fell ill with a neurosis as a result of a conflict during her girlhood. I was able to be

1 [In the earlier editions the words ‘without being directed towards an object’ occurred at this point. They were omitted in 1924.]

2 [This case history is used by Freud as a basis for discussing the nature of anxiety in Chapters IV and VII of Inhibitions, Symptoms and Anxiety (1926d).—It is also quoted in connection with totemism and animal phobias in Totem and Taboo (1912-13), Standard Ed., 13, 128 ff.]

Ehe ich nun in die voraussichtlich kurz gehaltenen Erörterungen eintrete, was aus der Phobie des kleinen Hans allgemein Wertvolles für Kinderleben und Kindererziehung zu entnehmen ist, muß ich dem lange aufgesparten Einwande begegnen, der uns mahnt, daß Hans ein Neurotiker, Hereditarier, Dégénére ist, kein normales Kind, von dem aus auf andere Kinder übertragen werden darf. Es tut mir lange schon leid, daran zu denken, wie alle die Bekenner des »Normalmenschens« unseren armen kleinen Hans mißhandeln werden, nachdem sie erst erfahren haben, daß ihm tatsächlich hereditäre Belastung nachgewiesen werden kann. Seiner schönen Mutter, die in einem Konflikt ihrer Mädchenzeit neurotisch erkrankte, hatte ich damals Hilfe geleistet, und

1 [In den früheren Ausgaben standen an dieser Stelle noch die Worte »ohne sich auf ein Objekt zu richten«. Sie wurden 1924 gestrichen.]
of assistance to her at the time, and this had in fact been the beginning of my connection with Hans’s parents. It is only with the greatest diffidence that I venture to bring forward one or two considerations in his favour.

In the first place Hans was not what one would understand, strictly speaking, by a degenerate child, condemned by his heredity to be a neurotic. On the contrary, he was well formed physically, and was a cheerful, amiable, active-minded young fellow who might give pleasure to more people than his own father. There can be no question, of course, as to his sexual precocity; but on that point there is very little material upon which a fair comparison can be based. I gather, for instance, from a piece of collective research conducted in America, that it is by no means such a rare thing to find object-choice and feelings of love in boys at a similarly early age; and the same may be learnt from studying the records of the childhood of men who have later come to be recognized as ‘great’. I should therefore be inclined to believe that sexual precocity is a correlate, which is seldom absent, of intellectual precocity, and that it therefore to be met with in gifted children more often than might be expected.¹

Furthermore, let me say in Hans’s favour (and I frankly admit my partisan attitude) that he is not the only child who has been overtaken by a phobia at some time or other in his childhood. Troubles of that kind are well known to be quite extraordinarily frequent, even in children the strictness of whose upbringing has left nothing to be desired. In later life these children either become neurotic or remain healthy. Their phobias are shouted down in the nursery because they are inaccessible to treatment and are decidedly inconvenient. In the course of months or years they diminish, and the child seems to recover; but no one can tell what psychological

¹ [This question is touched on in a paragraph on ‘Precocity’ near the end of Freud’s Three Essays (1905d; Standard Ed., 7, 241).]
changes are necessitated by such a recovery, or what alterations in character are involved in it. When, however, an adult neurotic patient comes to us for psycho-analytic treatment (and let us assume that his illness has only become manifest after he has reached maturity), we find regularly that his neurosis has as its point of departure an infantile anxiety such as we have been discussing, and is in fact a continuation of it; so that, as it were, a continuous and undisturbed thread of psychical activity, taking its start from the conflicts of his childhood, has been spun through his life irrespective of whether the first symptoms of those conflicts has persisted or has retreated under the pressure of circumstances. I think, therefore, that Hans’s illness may perhaps have been no more serious than that of many other children who are not branded as ‘degenerates’; but since he was brought up without being intimidated, and with as much consideration and as little coercion as possible, his anxiety dared to show itself more boldly. With him there was no place for such motives as a bad conscience or a fear of punishment, which with other children must no doubt contribute to making the anxiety less. It seems to me that we concentrate too much upon symptoms and concern ourselves too little with their causes. In bringing up children we aim only at being left in peace and having no difficulties, in short, at training up a model child, and we pay very little attention to whether such a course of development is for the child’s good as well. I can therefore quite imagine that it may have been to Hans’s advantage to have produced this phobia. For it directed his parents’ attention to the unavoidable difficulties by which a child is confronted when in the course of his cultural training he is called upon to overcome the innate instinctual components of his mind; and his trouble brought his father to his assistance. It may be that Hans now enjoys an advantage over other children, in that he no longer carries within him that seed in the shape of repressed

Veränderungen eine solche Heilung bedingt, welche Charakterveränderungen mit ihr verknüpft sind, darin hat niemand Einsicht. Wenn man dann einmal einen erwachsenen Neurotiker in psycho-analytische Behandlung nimmt, der, nehmen wir an, erst in reifen Jahren manifest erkrankt ist, so erfährt man regelmäßig, daß seine Neurose an jene Kinderangst anknüpft, die Fortsetzung derselben darstellt, und daß also eine unausgesetzte, aber auch ungestörte psychische Arbeit sich von jenen Kinderkonflikten an durchs Leben fortgesponnen hat, ohne Rücksicht darauf, ob deren erstes Symptom Bestand hatte oder unter dem Drange der Verhältnisse zurückgezogen wurde. Ich meine also, unser Hans ist vielleicht nicht stärker erkrankt gewesen als so viele andere Kinder, die nicht als »Degenerierte« gebrandmarkt werden; aber da er ohne Einschüchterung, mit möglichster Schonung und möglichst geringem Zwang erzogen wurde, hat sich seine Angst kühner hervorgewagt. Die Motive des schlechten Gewissens und der Furcht vor der Strafe haben ihr gefehlt, die sonst gewiß zu ihrer Verkleinerung beitrugen.

Mir will scheinen, wir geben zu viel auf Symptome und kümmern uns zu wenig um das, woraus sie hervorgehen. In der Kinderziehung gar wollen wir nichts anderes als in Ruhe gelassen werden, keine Schwierigkeiten erleben, kurz, das brave Kind züchtigen und achten sehr wenig darauf, ob dieser Entwicklungs gang dem Kinde auch vommt. Ich könnte mir also vorstellen, daß es heilsam für unseren Hans war, diese Phobie produziert zu haben, weil sie die Aufmerksamkeit der Eltern auf die unvermeidlichen Schwierigkeiten lenkte, welche die Überwindung der angeborenen Triebkomponenten in der Kulturerziehung dem Kinde bereiten muß, und weil diese seine Störung die Hilfleistung des Vaters nach sich zog. Vielleicht hat er nun vor anderen Kindern das voraus, daß er nicht mehr jenen Keim verdrängter
complexes which must always be of some significance for a child's later life, and which undoubtedly brings with it a certain degree of deformity of character if not a predisposition to a subsequent neurosis. I am inclined to think that this is so, but I do not know if many others will share my opinion; nor do I know whether experience will prove me right.

But I must now enquire what harm was done to Hans by dragging to light in him complexes such as are not only repressed by children but dreaded by their parents. Did the little boy proceed to take some serious action as regards what he wanted from his mother? or did his evil intentions against his father give place to evil deeds? Such misgivings will no doubt have occurred to many doctors, who misunderstand the nature of psycho-analysis and think that wicked instincts are strengthened by being made conscious. Wise men like these are being no more than consistent when they implore us for heaven's sake not to meddle with the evil things that lurk behind a neurosis. In so doing they forget, it is true, that they are physicians, and their words bear a fatal resemblance to Dogberry's, when he advised the Watch to avoid all contact with any thieves they might happen to meet: 'for such kind of men, the less you meddle or make with them, why, the more is for your honesty.'

On the contrary, the only results of the analysis were that Hans recovered, that he ceased to be afraid of horses, and that he got on to rather familiar terms with his father, as the latter reported with some amusement. But whatever his father may have lost in the boy's respect he won back in his respect.

1 [Much Ado about Nothing, III, 3.] At this point I cannot keep back an astonished question. Where do my opponents obtain their knowledge, which they produce with so much confidence, on the question whether the repressed sexual instincts play a part, and if so what part, in the aetiology of the neuroses, if they shut their patients' mouths as soon as they begin to talk about their complexes or their derivatives? For the only alternative source of knowledge remaining open to them are my own writings and those of my adherents.
confidence: 'I thought', said Hans, 'you knew everything, as you knew that about the horse.' For analysis does not undo the effects of repression. The instincts which were formerly suppressed remain suppressed; but the same effect is produced in a different way. Analysis replaces the process of repression, which is an automatic and excessive one, by a temperate and purposeful control on the part of the highest agencies of the mind. In a word, analysis replaces repression by condemnation. This seems to bring us the long-looked-for evidence that consciousness has a biological function, and that with its entrance upon the scene an important advantage is secured.1

If matters had lain entirely in my hands, I should have ventured to give the child the one remaining piece of enlightenment which his parents withheld from him. I should have confirmed his instinctive premonitions, by telling him of the existence of the vagina and of copulation; thus I should have still further diminished his unsolved residue, and put an end to his stream of questions. I am convinced that this new piece of enlightenment would have made him lose neither his love for his mother nor his own childish nature, and that he would have understood that his preoccupation with these important, these momentous things must rest for the present—until his wish to be big had been fulfilled. But the educational experiment was not carried so far.

That no sharp line can be drawn between 'neurotic' and

1 (Footnote added 1923:) I am here using the word 'consciousness' in a sense which I later avoided, namely, to describe our normal processes of thought—such, that is, as are capable of consciousness. We know that thought processes of this kind may also take place preconsciously; and it is wiser to regard their actual 'consciousness' from a purely phenomenological standpoint. By this I do not, of course, mean to contradict the expectation that consciousness in this more limited sense of the word must also fulfill some biological function. (See The Ego and the Id (1923b), Chapter I. Cf. also the early discussion of the biological function of 'consciousness' in the closing pages of The Interpretation of Dreams (1900a; Standard Ed., 5, 615 ff.).)
'normal' people—whether children or adults— that our conception of 'disease' is a purely practical one and a question of summation, that predisposition and the eventualities of life must combine before the threshold of this summation is overstepped, and that consequently a number of individuals are constantly passing from the class of healthy people into that of neurotic patients, while a far smaller number also make the journey in the opposite direction.—all of these are things which have been said so often and have met with so much agreement that I am certainly not alone in maintaining their truth. It is, to say the least of it, extremely probable that a child's upbringing can exercise a powerful influence for good or for evil upon the predisposition which we have just mentioned as one of the factors in the occurrence of 'disease'; but what that upbringing is to aim at and at what point it is to be brought to bear seem at present to be very doubtful questions. Hitherto education has only set itself the task of controlling, or, it would often be more proper to say, of suppressing, the instincts. The results have been by no means gratifying, and where the process has succeeded it has only been to the advantage of a small number of favoured individuals who have not been required to suppress their instincts. Nor has any one enquired by what means and at what cost the suppression of the inconvenient instincts has been achieved. Supposing now that we substitute another task for this one, and aim instead at making the individual capable of becoming a civilized and useful member of society with the least possible sacrifice of his own activity; in that case the information gained by psycho-analysis, upon the origin of pathogenic complexes and upon the nucleus of every nervous affection, can claim with justice that it deserves to be regarded by educators as an invaluable guide in their conduct towards children. What practical conclusions may follow from this, and how far experience may justify the application of those conclusions within our present social

Substituiert man dieser Aufgabe eine andere, das Individuum mit der geringsten Einbuße an seiner Aktivität kulturfähig und sozial verwertbar zu machen, so haben die durch die Psychoanalyse gewonnenen Aufklärungen über die Herkunft der pathogenen Komplexe und über den Kern einer jeden Neurose eigentlich den Anspruch, vom Erzieher als unschätzbarer Hinweis für sein Benehmen gegen das Kind gewürdigt zu werden. Welche praktischen Schlüsse sich hieraus ergeben, und inwieweit die Erfahrung die Anwendung derselben innerhalb unserer sozialen Verhältnisse rechtfertigen
system, are matters which I leave to the examination and decision of others.¹

I cannot take leave of our small patient's phobia without giving expression to a notion which has made its analysis, leading as it did to a recovery, seem of especial value to me. Strictly speaking, I learnt nothing new from this analysis, nothing that I had not already been able to discover (though often less distinctly and more indirectly) from other patients analysed at a more advanced age. But the neuroses of these other patients could in every instance be traced back to the same infantile complexes that were revealed behind Hans's phobia. I am therefore tempted to claim for this neurosis of childhood the significance of being a type and a model, and to suppose that the multiplicity of the phenomena of repression exhibited by neuroses and the abundance of their pathogenic material do not prevent their being derived from a very limited number of processes concerned with identical ideational complexes.

¹ [Freud returned to the question of psycho-analysis and the upbringing of children in his prefaces to books by Pfister (1913b) and Aichhorn (1926f) and in Part II (H) of his contribution to Scientia (1913j). He also devoted some pages to the same subject in Lecture XXXIV of his New Introductory Lectures (1933a).]
A FEW months ago—in the spring of 1922—a young man introduced himself to me and informed me that he was the ‘little Hans’ whose infantile neurosis had been the subject of the paper which I published in 1909. I was very glad to see him again, for about two years after the end of his analysis I had lost sight of him and had heard nothing of him for more than ten years. The publication of this first analysis of a child had caused a great stir and even greater indignation, and a most evil future had been foretold for the poor little boy, because he had been ‘robbed of his innocence’ at such a tender age and had been made the victim of a psychoanalysis.

But none of these apprehensions had come true. Little Hans was now a strapping youth of nineteen. He declared that he was perfectly well, and suffered from no troubles or inhibitions. Not only had he come through his puberty without any damage, but his emotional life had successfully undergone one of the severest of ordeals. His parents had been divorced and each of them had married again. In consequence of this he lived by himself; but he was on good terms with both of his parents, and only regretted that as a result of the breaking-up of the family he had been separated from the younger sister he was so fond of.

One piece of information given me by little Hans struck me as particularly remarkable; nor do I venture to give any explanation of it. When he read his case history, he told me, the whole of it came to him as something unknown; he did not recognize himself; he could remember nothing; and it was only when he came upon the journey to Gmunden that there dawned on him a kind of glimmering recollection that it might have been he himself that it happened to. So the


Nichts von all diesen Befürchtungen ist aber eingetroffen. Der kleine Hans war jetzt ein stattlicher Jüngling von 19 Jahren. Er behauptete, sich durchaus wohl zu befinden und an keinerlei Beschwerden oder Hemmungen zu leiden. Er war nicht nur ohne Schädigung durch die Pubertät gegangen, sondern hatte auch eine der schwersten Belastungsproben für sein Gefühlsleben gut bestanden. Seine Eltern hatten sich voneinander geschieden und jeder Teil eine neue Ehe geschlossen. Seine Eltern hatten sich voneinander geschieden und jeder Teil eine neue Ehe geschlossen. Er lebe infolgedessen allein, stehe aber mit beiden Eltern gut und bedaure nur, daß er durch die Auflösung der Familie von seiner lieben jüngeren Schwester getrennt worden sei.

Eine Mitteilung des kleinen Hans war mir besonders merkwürdig. Ich getraute mich auch nicht, eine Erklärung für sie zu geben. Als er seine Krankengeschichte las, erzählte er, es sei ihm alles fremd vorgekommen, er erkannte sich nicht, konnte sich an nichts erinnern, und nur als er auf die Reise nach Gmunden stieß, dämmerte ihm etwas wie ein Schimmer von Erinnerung auf, das könnte er selbst gewesen sein. Die Analyse hatte
analysis had not preserved the events from amnesia, but had been overtaken by amnesia itself. Any one who is familiar with psycho-analysis may occasionally experience something similar in sleep. He will be woken up by a dream, and will decide to analyse it then and there; he will then go to sleep again feeling quite satisfied with the result of his efforts; and next morning dream and analysis will alike be forgotten.¹

¹ [This phenomenon was discussed by Freud in a passage added in 1911 to his Interpretation of Dreams, 1900a (Chapter VII, Section A; Standard Ed., 5, 520–1).]

also die Begebenheit nicht vor der Amnesie bewahrt, sondern war selbst der Amnesie verfallen. Ähnlich ergeht es dem mit der Psychoanalyse Vertrauten manchmal im Schlaf. Er wird durch einen Traum geweckt, beschließt ihn ohne Aufschub zu analysieren, schläft, mit dem Ergebnis seiner Bemühung zufrieden, wieder ein, und am nächsten Morgen sind Traum und Analyse vergessen.¹

¹ [Diese Erscheinung wird von Freud in einem 1911 in seiner Traumdeutung (1900a) ergänzten Zusatz, Kapitel VII, gegen Mitte des Abschnitts A, erörtert.]
APPENDIX

SOME WRITINGS BY FREUD DEALING WITH ANXIETY AND PHOBIAS IN CHILDREN AND WITH OBSESSIONAL NEUROSIS

[The two main topics of the Case Histories in this volume were, of course, touched upon repeatedly by Freud. The following lists, however, include some of the chief passages in which they were more specifically discussed. The date at the beginning of each entry is that of the year during which the work in question was probably written. The date at the end is that of publication; and under that date fuller particulars of the work will be found in the Bibliography which follows.]

(a) ANXIETY AND PHOBIAS IN CHILDREN

1909 'Analysis of a Phobia in a Five-Year-Old Boy.' (1909b.)
1913 Totem and Taboo (Essay IV, Section 3). (1912-13.)
1914 'From the History of an Infantile Neurosis.' (1918b.)
1917 Introductory Lectures on Psycho-Analysis (Lecture XXV). (1916-17.)
1926 Inhibitions, Symptoms and Anxiety (Chapters VII and VIII). (1926d.)

(b) OBSESSIONAL NEUROSIS

1894 'The Neuro-Psychoses of Defence' (Section II). (1894a.)
1895 'Obsessions and Phobias.' (1895c.)
1895 Draft 'K' (Fliess Correspondence). (1950a.)
1896 'Further Remarks on the Neuro-Psychoses of Defence' (Section II). (1896b.)
1907 'Obsessive Acts and Religious Practices.' (1907b.)
1908 'Character and Anal Erotism.' (1908b.)
APPENDIX

1909 'Notes upon a Case of Obsessional Neurosis.' (1909a.)
1912 *Totem and Taboo* (Essay II, Sections 2 and 3(c), and Essay III, Sections 3 and 4). (1912-13.)
1913 'The Predisposition to Obsessional Neurosis.' (1913a.)
1914 'From the History of an Infantile Neurosis' (Section VI). (1918b.)
1916 'A Mythological Parallel to a Visual Obsession.' (1916a.)
1917 *Introductory Lectures on Psycho-Analysis* (Lecture XVII). (1916-17.)
1917 'On Transformations of Instinct as Exemplified in Anal Erotism.' (1917c.)
1926 *Inhibitions, Symptoms and Anxiety* (Chapters V and VI). (1926a.)

BIBLIOGRAPHY AND AUTHOR INDEX

(Titles of books and periodicals are in italics; titles of papers are in inverted commas. Abbreviations are in accordance with the *World List of Scientific Periodicals* (London, 1952). Further abbreviations used in this volume will be found in the List at the end of this bibliography. Numerals in thick type refer to volumes; ordinary numerals refer to pages. The figures in round brackets at the end of each entry indicate the page or pages of this volume on which the work in question is mentioned. In the case of the Freud entries, the letters attached to the dates of publication are in accordance with the corresponding entries in the complete bibliography of Freud's writings to be included in the last volume of the *Standard Edition*.

For non-technical authors, and for technical authors where no specific work is mentioned, see the General Index.)

**ABRAHAM, K.** (1909) *Traum und Mythus*, Vienna. (98)
[Trans.: *Dreams and Myths*, New York, 1909.]

**ADLER, A.** (1908) 'Der Aggressionsbetrieb im Leben und in der Neurose', *Fortschritte der Medizin*. (106, 140)

**ALEXANDER, F.** (1922) 'Kastrationskomplex und Charakter', *Int. Z. Psychoanal.*, 8, 11; (9)

**ANDREAS-SALOMÉ, L.** (1916) '“Anal” und “Sexual”', *Image*, 4, 249. (8)

**BEUELER, E.** (1910) 'Vortrag über Ambivalenz’ (Berne), Report in *Zentralbl. Psychoanal.*, 1, 266. (239)

**FEDERN, P.** (1948) 'Professor Freud: The Beginning of a Case-History', *Yearbook of Psychoanalysis*, 4, 14. (153)

**FREUD, S.** (1888–9) 'Vorrede zur Übersetzung von Bernheim *De la suggestion*, Vienna. (102)
[Trans.: 'Preface to Bernheim's *De Suggestion et son Action*', *C.P.*, 5, 11; Standard Ed., 1.]

(1894a) 'Die Abwehr-Neurose', *G.S.*, 1, 290; *G.W.*, 1, 57. (175, 319)
[Trans.: 'The Neuro-Psychoses of Defence', *C.P.*, 1, 59; Standard Ed., 3.]

(1895c) 'Obsessions et phobies', *G.S.*, 1, 334; *G.W.*, 1, 343. (242, 319)
[Trans.: 'Obsessions and Phobias', *C.P.*, 1, 128; Standard Ed., 3.]
BIBLIOGRAPHY

FREUD, S. (cont.)
(1936) ‘Weitere Bemerkungen über die Abwehr-Neurose- 
chosen’, G.S., 1, 363; G.W., 1, 377. (155, 221, 223, 319)
[Trans.: ‘Further Remarks on the Neuro-Psychoses of 
Defence’, G.P., 1, 155; Standard Ed., 3.]
(1899a) ‘Über Deckeninnerungen’, G.S., 1, 465; G.W., 1, 529.
(208, 280)
[Trans.: ‘Screen Memories’, C.P., 5, 47; Standard Ed., 3.]
(1900a) Die Traumdeutung, Vienna, G.S., 2–3; G.W., 2–3. (6, 11,
21, 31, 59, 111, 113, 118, 145, 149, 180, 218, 223, 224, 249,
246, 316)
[Trans.: The Interpretation of Dreams, London and New York,
1955; Standard Ed., 4–5.]
(1901a) Zur Psychopathologie des Alltagslebens, Berlin, 1904. G.S.,
4; G.W., 4. (159, 232)
[Trans.: The Psychopathology of Everyday Life, Standard Ed., 6.]
(1905a) Der Witz und seine Beziehung zum Unbewussten, Vienna.
G.S., 5, 5; G.W., 6. (59, 227, 241).
(1905a) Drei Abhandlungen zur Sexualtheorie, Vienna. G.S., 5, 5;
G.W., 5, 29. (6, 12, 41, 101, 108–111, 142, 203, 247)
Standard Ed., 7, 125.]
(1905a) ‘Bruchstück einer Hysterie-Analyse’, G.S., 8, 3; G.W.,
5, 165. (4, 156, 243)
[Trans.: ‘Fragment of an Analysis of a Case of Hysteria’,
C.P., 3, 15; Standard Ed., 7, 3.]
(1906a) ‘Meine Ansichten über die Rolle der Sexualität in der 
Ästhetik der Neurosen’, G.S., 5, 123; G.W., 5, 149. (208)
[Trans.: ‘My Views on the Part played by Sexuality in the
Aesthetics of the Neuroses’, C.P., 1, 272; Standard Ed., 7, 271.]
(1907a) Zwangshandlungen und Religionstübung’, G.S., 10,
210; G.W., 7, 129. (241, 319)
Standard Ed., 9.]
(1907a) Zur sexuellen Aufklärung der Kinder’, G.S., 5, 134;
G.W., 7, 19. (3)
[Trans.: ‘The Sexual Enlightenment of Children’, C.P., 2, 36;
Standard Ed., 9.]
(1908a) ‘Hysterische Phantasien und ihre Beziehung zur Bi­
sexuality’, G.S., 5, 246; G.W., 7, 191. (192)
[Trans.: ‘Hysterical Fantasies and their Relation to Bi­
sexuality’, C.P., 2, 51; Standard Ed., 9.]
(213, 319)
BIBLIOGRAPHY

FREUD, S. (cont.)
(1927e) 'Fetischismus', G.S., 11, 395; G.W., 14, 311. (247)
[Trans.: 'Fetishism', C.P., 5, 198; Standard Ed., 21.]
(1930a) Das Unbehagen in der Kultur, Vienna. G.S., 12, 29; G.W.,
14, 421. (248)
[Trans.: Civilization and its Discontents, London and New York,
1930; Standard Ed., 21.]
(1933a) Neue Folge der Vorlesungen zur Einführung in die Psycho-
Analyse, Vienna. G.S., 12, 151; G.W., 15, 207. (147)
[Trans.: New Introductory Lectures on Psycho-Analysis, London
and New York, 1933; Standard Ed., 22.]
(1937d) 'Konstruktionen in der Analyse', G.W., 16, 43. (183, 205)
[Trans.: 'Constructions in Analysis', C.P., 5, 358; Standard Ed.,
23.]
(1939a) Der Mann Moses und die monotheistische Religion, G.W., 16,
103. (36, 208)
[Trans.: Moses and Monotheism, London and New York, 1939;
Standard Ed., 23.]
(1950a) Aus den Anfängen der Psychoanalyse, London. [Includes
'Entwurf einer Psychologie' (1895)] (113, 208, 224, 240, 246,
248, 319)
[ Trans.: The Origins of Psycho-Analysis, London and New York,
1954. (Partly, including 'A Project for a Scientific Psychology';
in Standard Ed., 1.)]
Psychol., 3, 161; Papers on Psycho-Analysis, Chapter I, London,
1913. (192)
(1933) Sigmund Freud: Life and Work, 1, London. (280)
(210)
[Trans.: Studies in Word-Association, London.]
(221)
RANK, O. (1909) Der Mythus von der Geburt des Helden, Vienna. (70)
SADGER, I. (1908) 'Fragment der Psychoanalyse eines Homosexuel-
en', jub. sex. Zwischenst. 9. (109)
Klinik. (109)
STÄRCKE, A. (1910) 'Der Kastrationskomplex', Int. J. Psychoanal., 1,
9. (8)
[Trans.: 'The Castration Complex', Int. J. Psycho-Anal., 2, 179.]
(115)
WEININGER, O. (1903) Geschlecht und Charakter, Vienna. (36)
[Trans.: Sex and Character, London, 1906.]

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

G.S. = Freud, Gesammelte Schriften (12 vols.), Vienna,
1924–34.
G.W. = Freud, Gesammelte Werke (18 vols.), London, from
1940.
S.K.S.N. = Freud, Sammlung kleiner Schriften zur Neurosenlehre
(5 vols.), Vienna, 1906–22.
Vier Krankengeschichten = Freud, Vier psychoanalytische Krankenge-
schichten, Vienna, 1932.
GENERAL INDEX

This index includes the names of non-technical authors. It also includes the names of technical authors where no reference is made in the text to specific works. For references to specific technical works, the Bibliography should be consulted. The compilation of the index was undertaken by Mrs. R. S. Partridge.

Absurdity
in dreams, 218 n.
in obsessional thought, 164, 218 n.

Adige, River, 265

Adler, Alfred (see also Bibliographical Index), 106, 140-1, 160 n.

Adults, psycho-analysis of, 7, 8 n. 2, 35, 101-4, 143, 147

Affects
displacement of, 175-6, 196-8
disturbing, in obsessional neurosis, 165, 175-7, 186, 221 n.2, 222
energy discharged in, 246
regression of, on to residues of childhood, 199 n.
transformed into anxiety, 35, 137
withdrawal of, in obsessional neurosis, 196, 231

Aggressive instinct
Adler's theory of, 140-1

Aggressiveness
in Hans, 16, 18, 42, 88, 110, 112, 134-40
in 'Rat Man', 189, 205-9, 216-218, 226, 256, 278-9, 287, 301, 304, 307, 311

Agoraphobia, 115

Alcibiades, 240 n.2

Ambivalence, 42 n., 44-5, 112-13, 134-5, 180-1, 191-4, 237-42, 243-4

Amnesia, 33 n.2, 148-9, 164-5, 196-6, 231

Amphigenic phase, 209 n.1

Anal
eroticism, 107-8, 166-7, 213-14, 247 n.1, 277, 286, 308

S.F. X—Y 329

Anal—cont.
theory of birth, 68 n., 74-5, 87, 95, 105, 128, 131, 220
theory of sexual intercourse, 311

Analogies
agents provocateurs, 261
evacuation of Pompeii, 176-7
German courts of justice, 236
houses moved from one site to another, 245
police and murderer, 176
River Adige, 265 and n.2

Animals and the sexual curiosity of children, 9, 13-14, 33-4, 106-7, 141 n.2
Animates and inanimates differentiated by Hans, 9, 11 n.3, 14, 106

Anthropophagia, 215 n.1

Anti-semitism, 36 n.

Anxiety, neurotic (see also Fear; Phobias)
Adler's theory of, 140-1
affect transformed into, 35, 137
ambivalent feelings as source of, 44-5
castration complex and, 100
displacement of, 51
in obsessional neurosis, 244
infantile, as source of neurosis, 143
masochism as source of, 27, 30, 119
relation between, and its objects, 25, 26, 125
sexual origin of, 25-7, 96, 114-115, 117-19, 126, 136, 139-41

Anxiety-attacks, 114-15

Anxiety-dreams, 23-4, 118
GENERAL INDEX

Anxiety-hysteria, 115-17
Apotropaics (see also Protective formulae), 193, 224-5, 257, 260, 280-1, 291, 294-5
Arabian Nights, the, 277
Art, symbolism in, 214 n.
Association of ideas, 102, 171, 174, 217, 227
Atmosphere, 233 n.
Auditory dreams, 20
Auto-erotism (see also Masturbation), 14, 94 n.2, 108-9, 114, 133, 206 n., 244
Baby equated with faeces, 68 n., 74-5, 87, 95, 105, 128, 131, 135, 220
Baba, 193, 260
Bath as symbol, 66-7, 69 n., 98-9, 114, 128
Brooding, obsessional, 245
Bruxus (in Julius Caesar), 180
Budapest, 285, 315
Bush, Wilhelm, 16 n.

Caprist, the 'cruel' (see Novak, Captain)
Cart as symbol, 46-51, 54-5, 66, 68, 89-91, 96-7, 124-5, 127-8, 129, 191
Castigation complex, 3, 36, 100, 105, 121, 123-4, 147-54
Censorship, 167 n., 206 n.
Childhood memories and phantasies of, 8 n.2, 124-5 n., 206 n.
Robust, 116, 141, 144
Children (see also Infantile) education of, 101, 103, 141, 145, 147-57
Psycho-analysis of, 5, 101-2, 104, 143, 148
Punishment of, 143, 205-6, 206 n., relation to other children, 206 n.
Sexual curiosity of (see Infantile sexual curiosity) suggestibility of 102 unreliability of assertions of 102-3
Circumcision, 36 n.
Cleanliness, obsessional, 197-8, 271-76-7
Clocks and watches, dislike of, 232
Conspicuous

'Complex stimulus-word', 216
Component instincts, 108, 138-9, 141-5

Castration, 101-4, 120-1, 144-5
Cathartic vs. obstetric, 7-8,
Causal action of, 8
Recapitulation of

Causation, 102, 137

Censure, 106-7, 137

Censorship, 167

Cowards, 247 n.1

Cowardice, in

Cowards, 245

Cow's udder connects ideas of penis and breast, 7

Death

Death attitude to, in obsessional neurosis, 233, 235-6, 297, 300-1
Fear of, 300-1, 306
Death instinct, 187 n.2
Death-wish, 234-6, 261, 299, 306
against brother or sister, 68, 84, 87, 89-90, 94-5, 105, 128-36, 217, 220
Compromise, 102

The trauma of, 8 n.2, 116 n.2

Disorder, 110, 238

Disorder, 310 n.1

Box as symbol, 68-71, 73, 73-8, 81, 86, 94-5, 97, 125
Brain-feeling, 7, 8 n.2
Breath, 245
Breast-feeding, 7, 8

Budapest, 285, 315

Busch, Wilhelm, 16 n.

Captain, the 'cruel' (see Novak, Captain)
Cart as symbol, 46-51, 54-5, 66, 68, 89-91, 96-7, 124-5, 127-8, 129, 191
Castigation complex, 8, 36, 100, 105, 121, 123-4, 147-54
Censorship, 167 n., 206 n.
Children (see also Infantile) education of, 101, 103, 141, 145, 147-57
Psycho-analysis of, 5, 101-2, 104, 143, 148
Punishment of, 143, 205-6, 206 n., relation to other children, 206 n.
Sexual curiosity of (see Infantile sexual curiosity) suggestibility of 102 unreliability of assertions of 102-3
Circumcision, 36 n.
Cleanliness, obsessional, 197-8, 271-76-7
Clocks and watches, dislike of, 232
Conspicuous

'Complex stimulus-word', 216
Component instincts, 108, 138-9, 141-5

Castration, 101-4, 120-1, 144-5
Cathartic vs. obstetric, 7-8,
Causal action of, 8
Recapitulation of

Causation, 102, 137

Censure, 106-7, 137

Censorship, 167

Cowards, 247 n.1

Cowardice, in

Cowards, 245

Cow's udder connects ideas of penis and breast, 7

Death

Death attitude to, in obsessional neurosis, 233, 235-6, 297, 300-1
Fear of, 300-1, 306
Death instinct, 187 n.2
Death-wish, 234-6, 261, 299, 306
against brother or sister, 68, 84, 87, 89-90, 94-5, 105, 128-36, 217, 220
Compromise, 102

The trauma of, 8 n.2, 116 n.2

Disorder, 110, 238

Disorder, 310 n.1

Box as symbol, 68-71, 73, 73-8, 81, 86, 94-5, 97, 125
Brain-feeling, 7, 8 n.2
Breath, 245
Breast-feeding, 7, 8

Budapest, 285, 315

Busch, Wilhelm, 16 n.

Captain, the 'cruel' (see Novak, Captain)
Dream, 'Rat Man'—cont.
of captain's badges of rank, 295
of complex machine, 273–4
of copulating with his sister, 278
of examination, 269, 276
of Freud's daughter with dung
for eyes, 200, 203
of Freud's mother being dead, 193
of his father's return, 298
of idiot child's funeral, 270
of Japanese swords, 257, 267–8, 271–2, 282–3
of licking his lady's feet, 277
of not washing, 271–2
of pearl in road, 274
of rags changing to gorgeous
clothes, 268
of Riser's embrace, 267
of seeing his lady's grandmother
naked, 283
of sister's illness, 272–3
of sister's teeth, 269
of springboard, 308–9
of terms of abuse, 277
of tobacco, 268–9
of tooth extraction, 315–18
of WK, 294–5
of walled town, 285–6
Dream, Schönhäut'n of fishes' hair, 310–11
Dream-content, manifest, 224–5
Dreams, 15, 119, 126, 133, 136
serendipity in, 218 n.
anxiety, 23–4, 118
auditory, 20
interpretation of, 206 n., 217, 220
of the death of loved persons, 11 n.2
premonitory, 261, 268–70, 275
punishment, 118
speeches in, 21, 223, 274
wish-fulfilment in, 283
Dumas, A., 195, 266
Education, 101, 103, 141, 143,
145–6
Ego—cont.
standard for measuring the external
world, 107
Egyptians, ancient, 233 n., 297
Ejaculatio praecox, 292
Ellipses
distort by, 226–7, 279
in making jokes, 227 n.
Endopsychic perceptions, 164, 291–2
Enuresis, 108, 284
Epistemonilic instinct (see also
Infantile sexual curiosity), 245
Erect posture in man, 248
Erections, 161–2, 302, 309
Erotic feelings aroused in child
by mother's tenderness, 22, 28
by toilet, 19, 19 n., 107–8
in bed with parents, 17, 28, 39,
118–19
Erotogenic zones, 107–9
Eruction, 256, 292, 295
Exelberg, 304
Exhibitionism
in Hans, 14, 83, 107, 211
in 'Rat Man', 256, 276, 309
External world (see Reality)
Faeces
(see also Constipation; Coprophagy;
Coprophilia; Defecation)
castration complex and loss of,
8 n.2
equated with baby, 68 n., 74–5,
87, 95, 105, 12S, 131, 133, 220
equated with horse, 65–8
equated with load on cart, 127
equated with money, 200
playing with, 109
retention of, in infancy, 108, 287
Fairy stories, 9
Falling down as symbol, 46, 48–51,
53, 55, 65, 82, 88, 95, 924–6,
128, 131, 136
Father
as sexual opponent, 206 n.
death-wish against (see Death-
wish)
role of the, doubts as to, 134–5,
145
Faust (Goethe), 216 n.1 and 2
Fellatio, 7, 283
Fellatio
(see also Fear, Anxious,
obsessional)
Fellatio corresponds to repressed wish, 180
obsessional (see Obsessional fear)
of baths, 66–7, 98–9, 114, 128
of death, 300–1, 306
of horse (see Horse)
of punishment, 143, 205–6, 209,
265
of railways, 84
of streets, 22–6, 31, 43, 84, 96,
114
of stuffed bird, 309
of syphilis, 214, 288–9
Fetishism, 247 n.2
First communications by patient,
importance of, 160 n., 200
Fixation, 109
Flageljahre (by Jean Paul), 270
Fleet, Wilhelm, 113 n.1, 206 n.,
224 n.1, 248 n.
Fluss, Gisela, 280
Frankfurt, 196 n.
Genital zone, 107, 109–10
Genitals, distinction between male
and female, 7, 9–11, 14, 21, 28,
31–2, 36, 62, 106, 110, 120, 135
Geschwister (by Sudermann), 183 n.1
Giraffe as symbol, 37–40, 121–3
Gleichenberg, 291
God, 42–3, 85, 87, 91, 171, 193
Goethe, 128 n., 204, 216 n.1 and 2,
262
Greek myths, 8
Grundhut, Professor, 276
Guilt, sense of (see also Obsessional
self-reproach), 8, 175–6, 183 n.2.,
300
Hamlet, 241 n.2
Hanna (Hans's sister)—cont.
Hanna's interest in genitals of, 11,
14, 28, 31, 62, 106
Hanna's jealousy of, 11, 67–9, 72,
113–14, 132
Hanna's phantasy about, 69–71,
75–7, 129
Hanna's father
analyses his son, 5, 101–3, 117,
138
Hanna's death-wish against, 52,
90, 111–12, 114, 125–6, 128,
130–2, 134
Hanna's desire to see genitals of,
9, 107
Hanna's hostility towards, 44–6,
82–3, 123, 129, 137–8, 140, 144
Hanna's love for, 29, 44, 134,
144–5
Hanna's sexual envy of, 39–41, 65,
122, 130, 133–5
identified with Hans himself, 52,
89–90, 98
identified with horse, 42, 45–6,
49–54, 83, 123, 125–6, 129
Hanna's mother
and birth of Hanna, 10, 70–1, 85,
91, 96, 128–9, 131, 133, 135
Hanna's attempt to seduce, 19–20,
25, 118–19
Hanna's longing to be in bed with,
17, 23, 25–6, 33–9, 43–4, 47,
65, 82, 90, 111, 118, 132–4
Hanna's fear of losing, 23–4, 44–5,
118
Hanna's interest in genitals of, 7,
9–10, 22, 27, 31–2, 38–9, 62–
63, 67, 107, 120
Hanna's love for, 24–7, 39–47, 89,
91–2, 97, 108, 110–11, 114,
118–19, 121–3, 130–40, 144–5
Hanna's sadistic impulses towards,
81, 83, 130, 138
Harden, Maxmillian, 310
Hauptziehant aufwirtschaft, 35, 81, 99
Heine, T. T., 131 n.
Heredity and experience as actiological
factors, 101, 116, 141–2,
144, 146, 185
Neurotics
and normal persons, 101, 113, 141, 145-6, 202
"protection formula", 6, 8, 83, 143
New York, 275-6, 289
Next world, 'Rat Man' s ideas of,
169, 175, 178, 223, 233, 235-6, 297, 301
Nietzsche, 184
Normal persons and neurotics, 101, 113, 141, 145-6, 202
Neuk, Captain, 166-9, 172-3, 210-
211, 212 n., 213-17, 277, 280, 287-
8, 290, 297
'Nuclear complex' of neurosis,
206 n.
Nuremberg, 227, 272
Nurses replaced by mother in phantasies, 206 n.
Object-choice
in childhood, 15-19, 26, 32 n.1, 33, 92-3, 108-11, 132, 142, 206 n.
in homosexuality, 109-10, 160 n.
Obsessional acts, 223 n.1, 227, 244-5, 249
looking at penis in looking-glass, 204, 222, 302-3, 310
removing branch from road, 191 n.2
removing stone from road, 190-
192, 204, 237, 306-7
slimming, 188-9, 259, 303-4, 306, 310
Obsessional brooding, 245
Obsessional cleanliness, 197-8,
271, 276-7
Obsessional commands, 187, 189,
222-3, 244, 256-60, 262-3, 271, 275-6, 300-1, 305
Obsessional deliria, 164, 173, 212-
215, 220, 222, 225, 247, 275, 297, 313-14
Obsessional doubt, 191, 222, 227-
228, 232, 241-3
Obsessional fears, 158, 162-5,
167, 169, 178-80, 235, 255-6
Obsessional ideas, 186-95, 221-9
indeterminateness of, 163, 169
Obsessional ideas—cont.
that 'Rat Man's father might
die, 176-9
that 'Rat Man' s parents knew his
thoughts, 162-4, 178, 181, 256
Obsessional impulses, 221-2, 243-
244
criminal, 159, 187-9, 260
for protecting (see Protective
formulas), 163, 189, 191, 305-6
for understanding, 190-1, 237, 246, 305
suicidal, 158, 187-9, 255, 257, 259-
60, 263-4, 272, 300-4, 306
to count in thunderstorms, 189-
191, 259, 305-6
to harm his lady, 255
insert contradictory words, 193, 242, 260, 310
to stop washing, 271-2
to talk, 305
Obsessional neurosis
actiology of, 155, 165, 221, 244-6
case of (branch in road and
clean notes), 192 n.2, 197
case of (comb), 227-8, 243
case of (disintegrated person-
ality), 249
case of (jewellery prohibition),
246-7
to insert contradictory words,
193, 242, 260, 310
to stop washing, 271-2
to talk, 305
Obsessional phantasies
Oedipus complex; Phallic symbols)
Parents and children, 206
Paternity doubts
Parental intercourse, 41, 90, 100, 135-6
Parents and children, 206 n.
Paternity, doubts of, 233
Paul, Jean, 270
Penis (see Castration complex;
Genitals; Phallic symbols)
Peripheral vision, 231, 270
Personality, disintegration of, in
obsessional neurosis, 177, 248-9,
278
Perversions, 109-9, 277-8, 283-4
Phallic symbols, 39-40, 98, 127-8,
214, 233 n., 311, 313-15
Phantasies and reality, 93 n.2, 206 n.
defensive, 120
masturbation, 32, 202
neurophile, 278
obsessional (see Phantasies, 'Rat
Man' s)
primar, and memories, 8 n.2,
123 n., 206-8 n.
reproachment, 128
revenge, 185, 194-5, 237, 265-6
Phantasies—cont.
transference, 199-200, 209, 282-5, 293, 295-6, 307-8, 310-11, 313
unconscious, 206 n., 242
wishful, 52, 131
Phantasies, Hans s
of boy on a truck, 83, 130
of forcing way into forbidden
enclosure, 46-1, 122-3
of giraffes, 37-40, 121-3
of Hannah in a box, 69-71, 75-7,
129
of Hannah riding a horse, 70, 75-7
of having children, 92-3, 96-7,
107-8, 114, 131-5
of journey to Gmunden, 65-6,
71
of laying an egg, 85-6
of marrying his mother, 92-3,
97, 114, 131
of missing a train, 81-2, 130
of plunger giving him a new
'widdler', 98, 100, 105, 131
of plunger unscrewing bath,
65-6, 105, 127-8
of producing babies himself,
94-5, 153
of seeing his mother's genitals,
32, 120
of smashing railway-carriage
windows, 41, 122-3
of teasing horses, 79-81, 83,
129-30
Phantasies, 'Rat Man' s
of committing suicide on the
Semmering, 263
doctor Pr. being dead, 299
doctor Pr. assaulting Julie, 307
doctor Pr. assaulting Paul,
286
development, 120
of falling, 307-8, 310-13
of his father's reincarnation,
174-5, 204, 275, 309
of his father's collapse in the
ranks, 304
of his lady being a prostitute,
312-13
of lump of blood in the head,
271-2
the lump of blood in the head,
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Topic</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Wording of obsessional ideas, 124, 223-4, 247</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Words treated concretely by children, 59 n.2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Work, incapacity for, in 'Rat Man', 175, 187, 199, 204, 235, 300, 302</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Worms and anal erotism, 213-14, 256, 276, 308-9, 311</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wundt, W., 11 n.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zeus, 233 n.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zola, E., 306</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>